

國家圖書館



003716202

C
I
R
L



英漢對照



謝冰瑩著

女叛徒

林語堂女公子林子如·林無雙譯

R
E
B
E
L



1945. 紙
買子登口價 5380.00
寄北幣 1566.5.21



由國家圖書館數位化、
典藏

目次

CONTENTS

第一章 幼年時代 (My Childhood)	2
我的家庭 (My Family)	8
黃金的兒童時代 (Golden Years)	14
採茶女 (The Girls Who Picked Tea Leaves)	18
紡紗的姑娘 (The Spinning Girl)	20
痛苦的第一聲 (The First Cry of Pain)	22
第二章 求學時代 (School Life)	26
近視眼先生 (The Nearsighted Teacher)	26
未成功的自殺 (The Suicide that Failed)	30
小學時代的生活 (Life in the Primary School)	36
開始與小說發生關係 (Beginning to Read Novels)	38
教會學校 (Missionary School)	42
中學時代的生活 (Life in High School)	48
第三章 從軍時代 (In The Army)	56
被開除了 (Dismissed)	60
入伍 (First Day as a Cadet)	65
紀律 (Discipline)	74
出發 (To the Front)	78
戰爭 (War)	80
夜間行軍 (Marching at Night)	82
解散的前夜 (The Last Night with the Army)	90

第四章	家庭監獄 (The Family Prison) ...	93
	被母親關起來了 (Interned by My Mother)	93
	慘痛的噩耗 (Tragic News)	120
第五章	逃奔 (Escape)	124
	第一次逃奔 (The First Escape)	128
	第二次逃奔 (The Second Escape)	134
	第三次逃奔 (The Third Escape)	140
	第四次逃奔 (The Fourth Escape)	142
第六章	飄流 (Wandering)	164
	小學教員 (Schoolteaching)	172
第七章	饑餓與戀愛 (Hunger and Love)	182
	北平 (Peiping)	194
	回到南邊 (Return to the South)	212
	母親和女兒 (Mother and child)	216
	「小兵」 (Little Soldier)	220

關於本書

一九三九年夏，如斯無雙向她們的父親說，要做些有益國家的事，她們的父親就叫她們翻譯這本書。這本書的原作者謝冰瑩，可說是現代中國兒女的典型，從舊禮教與封建制度下掙扎出來，終於得到了勝利。我們深信翻譯這本書是極有價值的，祇少使外人對中國，得到更深一層的認識。

文中有謝冰瑩女士特為供給之材料“第四次逃奔”詳的細故事，及“僑居與戀愛”一章，非常名貴。

如斯今年十六歲，無雙十三歲。她們的英文名字是 Adet Lin 和 Anor Lin。她們將跟着父親成為作家。中文作品，已散見於國內西風及宇宙風等雜誌，英文著作有“吾家”在美國出版，（中文譯本已由國風書店出版）這本“女叛徒”是她們的第二部作品，銷路都很不差，真不愧是將門之“女”。

本書譯筆淺顯流暢，內有美麗動人的描寫文，有詳明信達的記事文，亦有言正辭嚴的議論文，並插以各種對話與辯論文等，是學習英文者之最佳讀物。

第一章

幼年時代

新秋的氣候，似乎比夏天還炎熱，晚間雖有微微風從破紙窗裏吹來，但我被祖母抱在懷中滿身都是汗，白天被母親用棍條打過的皮膚上，現着一條條的血痕，在銀白色的月光底下的臉是慘白的。

忽然間，她由抽噎而放聲大哭了。

「小乖，我的寶貝，你再不要哭了，哭醒了母親，她又會來打你的。」祖母輕輕地拍着。

「我……我不怕打，她爲什麼不打死我呢？」我的話說得很大，好像故意要使母親知道似的；然而睡在隔壁的母親，終於忍着氣沒有做聲。

「寶寶，你以後不要淘氣了。你娘爲你不知受過多少苦。記一記吧，你把銅錢吞在喉管，不能吐出，又不能嚥下，整整的一天，你像斷了氣的孩子，眼睛翻白，口水直流，你母親急得爬過了二十里的高山去請水師（醫生），她在別人面前像瘋了似的磕着頭說：「只要有人救出我的孩子，他要我的命，都可犧牲。」後來銅錢吞在肚裏了，她又怕銅錢吸出了血，於你生命有妨礙，又特地着人到寶慶去買了幾十斤茨菇來給你吃，而且每次檢查你的大便，看

Chapter I

MY CHILDHOOD

THE NEW AUTUMN SEEMED EVEN HOTTER

than the summer. Though it was night, and a little breeze blew in from the paper window, I was sweating all through as my grandmother held me to her bosom. That day my mother had beaten me with a leather strap. My skin was bruised and my face was pitifully white in the silver moonlight.

Suddenly I shivered and cried out.

"My Precious," said Grandmother, as she tenderly patted me, "don't cry again. If you waken Mother she will beat you again."

"I am not afraid of being beaten. Why doesn't she beat me to death?" I spoke loudly, as if I wanted Mother to know; and in the next room Mother heard and was angry, but did not speak.

"Precious, don't be naughty after this," said Grandmother. "Because of you, your mother went through much torture. Remember when you got a penny in your throat, and you could not get it out or swallow it down, and for the whole day you were like a dead child, with your eyes turned white and saliva running out of your mouth. Your mother was so frightened that she went twenty miles up the mountain to call a doctor. She spoke like an insane person and knelt down and said, 'If anyone can save my child, I will give him my life if he wants it.' Then, when you swallowed the copper down, she was afraid that it would suck your blood, and that you might not live. So she sent men specially to Paoching to buy ten pounds of tseku herbs and every day she looked through your waste to see if the penny

銅錢有否出來。又有一次你爲了去弄屋梁上的燕子窠，從樓上掉下來，臉摔破了，氣也斷了，全身冰冷，完全失掉了知覺，你母親急得眼淚雙流，趕快一面請水師，一面跪在菩薩面前求靈水：「神啊，我的鳳寶寶如果有災難，就降給我吧，一切我來替代她，祇要保祐她康健，活潑，以我的生命去換取她一切的災難吧！」這幾件事，你總還記得吧？」

我停止了哭，靜靜地聽薛祖母說着關於我的故事。

「唉！我的心肝！」她長嘆了一聲，又繼續着說：「你的確太淘氣了，不知是什麼樣的。你娘自從懷了你的第一個月起，無論吃了什麼東西，都要嘔吐，即使喝一口水，吃一顆豆子也要吐出來。每天頭昏腹痛，到了最後的二三個月，她幾乎苦痛得要懇自殺，但一想到還有三個兒子一個女兒要她撫養時，又祇得持了生的念頭。

「這是她的生命關頭，你要出世了！兩天前，她就叫着肚子痛，不能起床；不要說吃飯，就連水也不能進口，在床上痛得打了二天滾，你的頭忽然從裏面出現了，我以爲小孩立刻就會下來，懷着滿腔的希望，眼睛睜地等着接生，誰知候了一天一夜，長滿了黑髮的頭還在原地方。你娘的精神，早已不能支持了，你的父親又不在家，我一個人守着，一步也不敢離開更沒有什麼辦法可想；後來

had come out. Another time, because you wanted to play with a pigeon's nest, you fell down from the roof; your face was hurt, your whole body was icy cold; you lost all consciousness. Tears ran down from your mother's eyes, and she hurried to get a doctor. Then, kneeling before the Buddha, she prayed, "Spirit if my Phoenix Precious has any bad luck, give it to me. I will go through it for her, but give her health, happiness, and let me have all her bad luck! These things you must still remember."

I stopped crying and quietly listened to Grandmother telling her stories about me.

"Oh! My heart and liver!" she sighed, and went on again. "You are much too naughty; I don't know where you came from. Even in the first month your mother conceived you, no matter what she ate, she threw it all up again. Even a mouthful of water and a pea she had to throw up. Every day she had a headache and a stomachache. When she reached the last two or three months she suffered until she almost wanted to commit suicide. But she thought of the sons and daughter she had to care for, and changed her mind.

"Then came the critical time when you were going to enter the world. Two days before, she said that she had a stomachache; she could not get up and did not want to eat, not even to take water. She rolled on her bed in pain for two whole days. Your head suddenly came out, and I thought your birth was to be soon. I had a bellyful of hope, and I waited anxiously. But after a day and a night, that little hairy head was still in the same place. Your mother's energy was giving out. Your father was not at home, and I watched her alone and did not dare to move away for one instant.

好容易託六祖母請了接生婆來。唉！提起接生婆真氣死人，以前你娘生了四個孩子，都沒有請過接生婆，而且每次均不過半個時辰（一小時）就下來了，誰知道這次生你經過一天一晚還是生不下，接生婆看了只是搖頭：

「沒有希望了，你們還是早點預備後事吧。」

「這樣的話，她居然也說出來了，六祖母堅決要接生婆將孩子弄出來，她說：『無論如何要救出大人；犧牲小孩，是毫無關係的。』」

「我那時急得全無主張了，倒是你母親還清醒，她凄咽地對我說：『媽，你趕快替我在南嶽聖帝面前許炷香吧！如果生的是個男孩，他滿了十六歲就去還香；要是個女孩，她二十歲時，我親自帶她去還。』」

「於是我聽了她的話，就跪在南嶽聖帝面前許了『血香。』果然快到天亮的時候，哇的一聲，你就落地了。你盆的聲音特別洪大，滿院子的人幾乎都給你驚醒了！你的眼睛像燈籠一樣的亮晶晶。眼珠轉動得特別快，一雙小拳頭和兩條腿動個不停；六祖母嘆息着說：『可惜是個千金，要是男孩，一定會做大官的，你看這一對大而活潑的眼睛。』」

「你母親很不高興地回答她：『兒子和女兒，都是一樣的。』」

8262-7
34
But there seemed nothing to do about it. After a long struggle, I told Sixth Grand-Auntie to call a midwife. Ah, talking about a midwife really makes people angry! Your mother had given birth to four children before, and never needed a midwife. Every time it was over in an hour. But who would have thought that this time after a day and a night, you would not come out? The midwife came to look and shook her head and said:

"There is no hope. You had better prepare the last rites."

"She could say a thing like that! Sixth Grand-Auntie urged the midwife to get the child out and cried, 'Anyway, you must save the mother, even if you have to sacrifice the child.'

"I was so worried that I didn't know what to do. But your mother had more presence of mind and she mumbled half weeping, 'Mother, hurry to the Holy Ruler of the South Sacred Mountain and burn incense! If a boy comes, then when he is sixteen, he will go and burn incense to give thanks. If it is a girl, when she is twenty I will take her myself and burn incense.'

"So I listened to her, and went and knelt before the god and promised to burn 'Blood Basin Incense' in thanks for answer to the prayer. And so at dawn you came out with a cry. Your voice was so big that you woke the whole courtyard. Your eyes were as bright as two lanterns. The eyeballs turned very quickly, and your hands and feet never stopped moving. Sixth Grand-Auntie sighed and said, 'Pity it is a girl. If it were a boy, surely he would be a high official. Look at those lovely eyes!'

"'Boys and girls are the same,' your mother said very much annoyed.

國家圖書館



003716202

「由此你可知道你的母親，雖爲你吃了不少苦，可是仍然痛愛你的，寶寶，以後再不要使她難過了，你要體貼你娘的辛苦和慈愛呀！」

祖母生怕我睡着了，其實我很清楚，腦筋裏一面演映着母親難產時的慘狀，一面深深地刻着白天母親第一次拚命鞭打我的情形。我懷疑剛才祖母敘述六祖母的話，也許就是她自己說的，不過爲了祖母太愛我，也就不和她算賬了。

我的家庭

父親是祖母的獨生子，他生長在一個極窮困的佃農家中，祖母常常告訴我們關於她嫁給祖父的故事。「我的娘家雖然很窮，可是來到你家就更現得窮了，不但沒有飯吃，簡直連碗都找不出兩個來。

「這話怎麼講呢？」當我最初聽到時，總是這樣問她。

「待我慢慢地告訴你吧，你祖父共五兄弟，你祖父行二，當曾祖父臨死時，每個兒子分一升米，一條凳，一隻碗，這就是他的遺產。你祖父不是也只能分到一只碗嗎？

那麼我來了怎麼辦呢？」

「去買一個來呀！」

「是的，因爲你祖父是個忠厚而努力工作的農夫，因此他每替人家做工，主人都待他很好；他賺了錢，不但可

"So you must know that your mother loves you, even though she went through a lot of suffering for you. Precious, from now on, you must think of your mother's sufferings and her love!"

Grandma thought I was asleep, but I was still wide awake, listening quietly. In my mind, I acted out Mother's giving birth to me. But at the same time I carved deeply the memory of Mother's beating me for the first time with a leather strap. I suspected that what Grandmother had told as Sixth GrandAuntie's remarks were really her own, but because I loved her so much, I did not say so to her.

MY FAMILY

Father was the only son of Grandmother. He was born a poor farmer. Grandmother often told us about her wedding with my grandfather. "My mother's family was poor," she said, "but when I came to your family it was even poorer. Not only was there no rice to eat we could not even find two bowls."

When I heard of this, I would ask her, "How could that be?"

"Let me tell you slowly. Your grandfather had five brothers. Grandfather was number two. When Greatgrandfather was dying, he left to each of them ten pounds of rice, a stool, and a bowl. That was all his property. Your grandfather got just one bowl, like the others. So, when I came, what was there to do?"

"Buy another one!"

"Yes, I did. For your grandfather was an honest and hardworking farmer, so that whenever he worked for others, the master always treated him well. He earned

"So you must know that your mother loves you, even though she went through a lot of suffering for you. Precious, from now on, you must think of your mother's sufferings and her love!"

Grandma thought I was asleep, but I was still wide awake, listening quietly. In my mind, I acted out Mother's giving birth to me. But at the same time I carved deeply the memory of Mother's beating me for the first time with a leather strap. I suspected that what Grandmother had told as Sixth GrandAuntie's remarks were really her own, but because I loved her so much, I did not say so to her.

MY FAMILY

Father was the only son of Grandmother. He was born a poor farmer. Grandmother often told us about her wedding with my grandfather. "My mother's family was poor," she said, "but when I came to your family it was even poorer. Not only was there no rice to eat we could not even find two bowls."

When I heard of this, I would ask her, "How could that be?"

"Let me tell you slowly. Your grandfather had five brothers. Grandfather was number two. When Greatgrandfather was dying, he left to each of them ten pounds of rice, a stool, and a bowl. That was all his property. Your grandfather got just one bowl, like the others. So, when I came, what was there to do?"

"Buy another one!"

"Yes, I did. For your grandfather was an honest and hardworking farmer, so that whenever he worked for others, the master always treated him well. He earned

以買碗，而且他將每年的工錢慢慢地積起來，後來就娶了我。我來到這裏之後，每天替人家洗衣服，做苦工，也可賺得一點米，慢慢地自可以買套耕具了，再向人家借一點買了一條牛，於是我們就租了幾畝田來耕。唉！說到耕田，我就記起你的父親了。他那時還只有七八歲，可是特別愛讀書，每天放牛時，總是偷偷地帶了本書藏在懷裏。到了野外，他就坐下來看書，不管牛走到什麼地方，或者吃掉人家的麥子，青菜，豆子等。有一次牛失蹤了，他嚇得一天不敢回家，哭得死去活來；第二天鄰居替他找到了，你祖父問他為什麼這樣粗心，他回答說因看書忘記了牛。從此，你祖父知道這孩子不是個牧牛郎，生來就是個書呆子，於是就允許送他讀書。只要他努力，將來還可送他去考狀元。

「你父親聽了這句話，簡直喜得發狂！他整天整夜的讀書，沒有月亮的晚上，就用松枝點着看，有時連手指都燒枯了，皮也燒掉了，他還是不知道。辛卯年赴省會考，沒有衣服穿，就拿我的破衣穿在裏面，另給他做了一件新的罩在上面，你祖父替他挑擔，店舖裏都把他當做僕人不認你祖父，後來你父親中了舉人，誰也沒想到這位挑夫，

1/2
20 Sow pig
50y
money, and not only could he buy bowls, but he could save money every year. When he married me, I washed clothes for people every day. I did hard work and earned a little rice too, and gradually we were able to buy a set of farming tools. And borrowing a little from others, we bought a cow. Then we rented a few acres of land. Oh! Talking about farming, I remember how your father, when he was only seven or eight, liked to study so much. Every day when he went to watch the cow, he quietly took a book and hid it in his jacket. When he got the meadow he would sit down and read. He did not care at all where the cow went, or whether it ate other people's wheat and vegetables. Once he lost the cow and was so scared that he did not return the whole day, and cried his eyes out. The next day a neighbor found him. Your grandfather asked why he was so careless, and he said that he was reading and had forgotten. From then on your grandfather knew that he was not a cowherd. He was born a bookworm. If he would work hard, by and by Grandfather would send him to take the imperial examinations.

"When your father heard this he was mad with joy! He studied day and night, when at night there was no moonlight, he would read under a lighted pine branch. Sometimes the branch even burned his fingers before he knew it. In 1891 he went to take the provincial examination. As he had no clothing, he wore my old dress inside, and I made him a new one to wear outside. Your grandfather carried his baggage so that the people at the hotel took your grandfather for a servant and did not attend upon him. When your father became a candidate for the second degree, no one knew that this baggage carrier

就是舉人的爸爸，哈哈！」

母親沒有兄弟，只有二個妹妹，她的個性特別強，她是個天不怕，地不怕的勇敢女性。家裏全由她處理。十六歲嫁給父親後，便在謝家山大出風頭，她是個絕頂聰明，而又富有辦事材幹。她的腦筋不用說是充滿了三從四德，男尊女卑的觀念，重視舊禮教，勝於看重自己的生命。她不論在家庭，在社會，她完全處在支配階級的地位。鄉村裏的大小，幾乎都要聽從她的話，地方上的公產也由她保管，爲的是她不揩油，熱心公益事業；村政上更是少不了她，一件什麼事情發生了，鄉長會議解決不了的，只要請她去說幾句，便什麼問題都沒有了。

她生來就具有一種不屈不撓的精神和堅強能幹的性格，因此誰都害怕她，服從她。這麼一來，她便不但在地方上成了霸王，就是對待兒女，也像君主對待奴隸一般，需要絕對服從她的命令，聽她的指揮。有一次大哥爲了帶了他的妻，到離我家五百里的益陽去組織小家庭，事前沒有得到母親的同意，她立刻把大哥找回來罰他在地上跪着，頭上頂着一大腳盆水，如果稍爲動一動，水倒了下來，母親就要打他的屁股，以後經許多人勸解，才將腳盆取了下來。

又有一次，二哥爲了要和他的兇惡的，毫沒有感情的

was his father!" Grandmother laughed loudly.

Mother had no brothers and only two sisters. Her will was very strong and she was a woman afraid of nothing. She ruled the family affairs; when she married Father at sixteen, she became quite well known in our village of Hsiehtushan. She was clever and had great ability. In her mind, needless to say, she had only the traditional ideas of women's obedience to men and the feminine virtues and the inequality of the sexes. She believed in Confucianism and valued it more than her own life. But whether at home or in society, she was always in the position of ruling others. Old and young, all listened to her, and the village public property was put in hands because she was honest and public-spirited. In the village government they needed her even more. If something happened, and the village council could not decide, they would ask for her advice, and with a few words from her, the problem would be settled.

She was born with an indomitable spirit and a strong, capable character. Who would not be afraid of her? Thus, she was not only the dictator of the village, but she treated her own sons and daughters like an emperor commanding slaves. We had to listen to and obey her orders. Once Elder Brother took his wife to live separately at Yiyang, five hundred li away, without letting Mother know beforehand. She immediately ordered him to come back, and punished him by making him kneel down on the ground with a big foot-basin full of water on his head. If he moved a little, the basin would fall, and Mother would beat him on his bottom. Only after many people had interceded, did she take the basin away.

Once because Second Brother wanted to divorce his

小脚老婆離婚，母親拍着桌子大聲罵道：「你這東西，讀了書回來做這種沒廉恥，無道德的事，難道真的不顧祖宗的面子嗎？你要離婚，先殺了我再說！在我沒有死以前，絕對不許有這種丟臉面的事發生的。」二哥知道母親的個性太強，如果離婚，就要犧牲她的性命，因此只好忍着苦痛，一直到吐血死了為止，他還是孤零零地沒有和第二個女性結合過。

至於姐姐更是如小羔羊一般馴良，在母親面前，連話都不敢大聲的。十八歲嫁給一個姓梁的，受盡了丈夫和翁姑的虐待，可是她回到家來，總是故意說她的丈夫如何待她好；她知道假若不這樣，母親反要罵她不會侍候丈夫的。好幾次遇着她在廁所裏流淚，或者晚上從夢中哭醒來。

三哥也是服從父母之命的，可是他比二哥強，有時雖然也會和母親吵起來，但他要做的事，總有方法感動父母使他們不能反對。

至於我呢？太慚愧了，我完全是個叛逆的孩子！

黃金的兒童時代

我是母親最小的孩子，姐姐比我大十歲，她在我剛滿八歲的那年就出嫁了。三個哥哥有二個隨着父親上縣城裏

wife, an old-type woman with small feet, Mother banged on the table and scolded loudly, "You who have studied for so long, come home to do such a shameless, immoral thing! Don't you want to leave your ancestors some face? If you want to divorce her, kill me first! But while I am still living, I will not allow this kind of disgrace to happen to our family." Second Brother knew that Mother's will was too strong, and that if he divorced his wife, he would sacrifice his mother's life. So he endured it until he spat blood and died. Second Brother remained lonely till his last days.

As for my elder sister, she was gentler than a lamb. In the presence of Mother she dared not even talk loud. At eighteen she married a man named Liang and was cruelly treated by her husband and her parents-in-law. Nevertheless, she always returned home saying how well her husband treated her, knowing that if she didn't say so, Mother would scold her for not knowing how to serve her husband. Many times I found her crying in the privy, or waking at night in tears in the middle of a dream.

Third Brother also obeyed his parents, but he was a stronger character than Second Brother. He, too, sometimes quarreled with Mother, but if he wanted to do something he had a way of appealing to his parents' hearts until they consented.

As for me, it is a shame, for I was a completely rebellious child.

GOLDEN YEARS

I was Mother's last child. Sister was ten years older than I. When I was just eight she was married. Two

讀書去了，大哥已經做了教師，他們一年回來二次，寒假和暑假是我們團圓的時候。母親每年冬天都要準備許多乾魚，臘肉，等他們回來吃。我很羨慕他們那種做客似的生涯，每次接到父親和哥哥們那天回家來的信時，母親總有一兩晚快活得不能睡覺。

她煮好了飯菜等着，替我換了一件乾淨的衣服，並且每次都這樣說：「乖乖，不要弄髒了，爸爸回來了會買糖給你吃，哥哥還要給你許多玩意兒呢。」

從縣裏到我的家裏有九十里路程，要爬過兩座高山，父親坐着轎子，還雇了一個挑夫，二哥和三哥總是穿着短衣和草鞋跑路，像個挑煤炭的孩子，走得氣喘喘地。

從下午五點鐘起，母親就牽着我的手站在門口盼望了，一直要到暮色蒼茫的時候，才看見遠遠地有頂轎子跑來。

「乖，你爸爸回來了！」母親連忙走回去準備開水泡茶，我同小黑狗賽跑似的走到半里遠的地方去迎接。

「爸爸，糖呢？」

我像小猴子上樹似的兩隻小手抱緊了父親的頸項，小黑狗也在搖着尾巴向父親撲來，二哥用棍子打牠，父親連忙說着「不打牠，不打牠，牠像寶寶一樣歡迎我們呢。」

of my three brothers followed Father to the town to study. Elder Brother was already a school teacher. They returned twice a year, and the winter and summer vacations were the time for our family gatherings. Every winter Mother prepared dry fish and smoked meats and awaited their return. I envied very much their visits, for they were treated like guests. Every time she received letters from Father and my brothers saying when they would return, Mother would be so glad that she would pass one or two sleepless nights.

She would cook the meal, put a new dress on me, and would say, "Dear, don't dirty that dress. When Father returns, he is going to buy you some candies. Your brothers are going to bring you toys."

From the town to our home was a distance of ninety li. They had to climb over two high hills. Father rode in a sedan chair and hired a luggage man. Second and Third Brothers always wore short trousers and straw sandals and ran panting like the boys carrying coal from the mines.

About five in the afternoon, Mother would take my hand and stand at the door and wait for them, until against the gray and cloudy sky, we saw far away a sedan chair coming.

"Darling, Father has returned!" Mother would cry, and go in to prepare water to make tea. I and my little black dog would race half li to welcome them.

"Father, where are the candies?" I would cry.

With both hands, I would hug Father's neck tightly, like a monkey climbing a tree. The little black dog would wag its tail and jump on Father. Second Brother often used a stick on him, but Father would say immediately,

於是連挑夫也笑起來了，只有我噙着嘴不做聲，我不高興父親把我當做小狗看待。

晚間在豆大的煤油燈下父親教哥哥讀古文，教我吟詩，母親和嫂嫂紡着紗，父親的吟詩聲常常和紡車聲打成一片，合奏着一種令人沉醉的音樂。

採茶女

母親因為我太不聽話了，白天總是在外邊玩，不肯規規矩矩地坐在家裏，她就給我一件苦工做；每天吃了早飯，就到茶園裏去採茶。

從我家到茶園有二里多路，中飯是用小籃子盛着，着人送去的，我和嫂嫂還有許多採茶女，都要黃昏時候才能回家，

我沒有採茶的經驗，常把一根一根的枝弄斷了，嫂嫂急得跳起來說：「妹妹，你還是去捉你的蝴蝶吧，不要弄壞了茶樹，母親知道了，又會罵你的。」

「不，我一定要採，難道你生來就會採的嗎？還不是學來的。」

她是最拙嘴的人，常常被我說得沒有話可答，這回她又失敗了。

與其說我在採茶，不如說採花還來得恰當。每次回家

"Don't beat him, don't beat him! He is coming to welcome us, like Precious." Even the baggage man would laugh. Only I held my mouth and kept quiet. I did not like Father comparing me to a little dog.

At night under the long flame of an oil lamp, father taught my brothers ancient Chinese and taught me to sing the poems, while Mother and Sister-in-law spun, so that Father's tunes and the singing of the poems often kept in rhythm with the sound of the spinning wheel, making an intoxicating music.

The Girl Who Picked Tea Leaves

Because I would not obey orders and did not sit at home according to the rules, but played outside the whole day, Mother gave me a hard task to do. Every day after breakfast I had to go out and pick tea leaves.

From my home to the tea garden, the distance was more than two li. My lunch was put in a basket, and someone carried it to me. Besides my sister-in-law and myself there were many other girls, and we did not come home till sundown.

I had no experience in picking tea leaves and often ruined the branches. Sister-in-law would be so worried that she would say, "You had better go and catch butterflies, and not go on breaking the tea branches. If Mother knew, she would scold you again."

"No, I will go on. Did you know how to pick them when you were born or did you have to learn, too?"

She was a poor talker and often did not know how to answer me, so usually she kept quiet.

It would be more appropriate if I called it picking flowers rather than picking tea. Every day on my return

時，我的小籃子裏老是裝滿了花，當經過一座五丈長的石橋時，我就將花丟在橋下讓水流送到洞庭湖裏去，還要囑咐牠一聲：

「花呀，你流到龍王那裏去吧，美麗的公主，正要等着做新娘了呢。」

紡紗的姑娘

秋風吹來了丹桂的幽香，月姐放出清朗的光輝，星星在天邊閃爍，孩子們在墳裏和影子賽跑，捉迷藏。我呢？八歲的小姑娘，已經開始做大人的工作了。

和我一同在月下紡紗的，除了嫂嫂而外，還有二個外孀的姑母和鄰居的孀姑娘。

凡是生長在我鄉的女孩，到了七八歲的時候便要教給她紡紗，績麻，做針綫。貧苦的替別人紡。每斤的工價是二百文，紡得最快的，每天最多紡四兩，普通的二兩，三兩。平均起來，一天只賺得三四個銅板。

我是替自己紡紗沒有一定的限制，母親說：「只要你紡得多，自己家裏種的棉花，如果還不夠供給你時，就到藍田市去買些來。」

「不，我不高興紡，我穿不了這麼多布呢。」我對媽媽說。

「不是你現在穿的，是準備你的嫁奩，只要你發憤多紡，將來抬二十箱衣服到婆家去。多麼闊氣呀！」

I had a small basketful of flowers. Going over the stone bridge, about fifty feet long, I would throw the flowers down to the water and let the stream carry them to Tungting Lake, with the bidding:

"O flowers, flow on to the palace of the Dragon King. His beautiful princess is preparing for her wedding."

The Spinning Girl (spinning)

The autumn wind carried with it the fragrance of cassias. The moon was shining in the clear sky, the stars were twinkling near the horizon, and children were racing with their own shadows in the yards or playing hide and seek. But I, a little eight-year-old girl, had already begun a grown-up's work.

Besides my sister-in-law and myself spinning in the moon-light, there were two distant paternal aunts and a neighbor girl named Chen.

Every girl who grew up in our village, when she reached the age of seven or eight, had to be taught to spin cotton and do linen and needle work. The poor worked for others, and the wages were twenty coppers for each catty. At the quickest, one could spin four ounces a day, while the average was two or three ounces, and the wages about three or four coppers.

I was working for myself and therefore had no set limit. Mother said, "If you can spin fast and if our own cotton isn't enough for you, we can go and buy some at Nantien."

"I don't like to spin and weave, I can't use so much cloth," I said.

"It is not for you now, but for your trousseau. If you will make up your mind to weave and have twenty trunks

痛苦的第一聲

媽媽從外面聽來了些關於我的閒言。說我這大年紀還不裹足，將來婆家一定不肯要的。而且八歲的姑娘，常常和男孩子在一塊做泥菩薩，拋石子，當司令，也太不成體統了。她們說，古時的規矩，男女四歲不同席，我母親是讀了書的女子，爲什麼連這一點規矩卻不懂呀？

當媽媽要我做一雙小尖頭紅鞋掛在觀世音菩薩的香爐上時，我不懂得是什麼一回事。

「寶寶，今天要替你裹足了，你來拜觀世音菩薩吧，神會保佑你裹得小的，像神的一樣。」

媽媽手裏點着香，燒着紙錠，只等我去下跪了。

我站得遠遠地望着她不敢走攔去，兩顆豆大的淚珠，突然掉了下來，我的心開始嘗到害怕和苦痛的滋味了。我說：「媽，我不裹足的。」

「快來，快來，菩薩保佑你！」她過來把我拖去跪在地上。

of clothing to carry to your future mother-in-law's home, how proud we shall be!"

The First Cry of pain

Mother heard outside much gossip about me, saying that I was so big and had not yet bound my feet, and that in future surely no mother-in-law would want me. Besides, I was still often with the boys, making clay Buddhas and throwing stones. I even organized a group of the village children to play at being soldiers, with myself as the "commander," which was most improper for a girl. The gossips said that, according to ancient rules, boys and girls after four years old should not eat at the same table, and that Mother, being an educated woman, ought to know this rule.

When Mother was making me a little pair of pointed red shoes, to hang before the incense container of the Goddess of Mercy, I did not understand what she was trying to do.

"Precious," she said, "today I am going to bind your feet. Come and worship the Goddess of Mercy, and she will grant you a pair of very small feet, like the Spirit herself."

Mother took an incense stick in her hand and lighted it and burned paper money, and waited for me to kneel down.

I watched her from across the room and dared not approach. Two big tears suddenly rolled down my face, and my heart began to feel the taste of fear and pain. I said, "Mother, I don't want to have my feet bound."

"Come quick, come quick! The Buddha will protect you," she said, and came over and seizing me made me

「媽，裏脚太痛了，我不能走路的，你不要害我吧。」
我又帶着恐怖的哭聲哀求她。

「裏脚是愛你，不裏脚才真是害你呢。你想想大腳姑娘怎麼嫁得出呢？」

母親一面說，一面用口含着在觀音菩薩那裏討來的所謂「仙水」噴在脚上，還散了些紅灰在腳趾縫裏，我這時更大哭大鬧起來。「媽，痛死了，我寧可永世不嫁，不願意裏脚呀！」

「你這小東西，還沒裏就叫起痛來，偏要給你裏緊一下看。」

從此，我每天只能坐在火爐邊紡紗，或者在堂屋裏慢慢地散散步，我像帶了腳鐐一般的不能走動，再也看不見美麗的花草和活潑的魚蝦了。

花朝節的那一天，母親趁着我熟睡的時候，在我的兩耳上鑽了兩個孔，我從夢裏痛醒來時，她已吊上兩根紅絲線了。

「好，現在你的三件大事，我已做了二件了。」母親很高興地對我說。原來她認為替女兒做的三件大事是：

(一)裏足

(二)穿耳

(三)出嫁

我這樣氣憤憤地回答她，害得她又大罵了一頓。

kneel down.

"Mother, binding feet is too painful. I shan't be able to walk. Don't do this to me," I begged her with tears of tear.

"Binding your feet is out of love for you; not binding them would be really doing you harm. You must think, how can a big-foot maiden be married off?"

She had taken a mouthful of holy water and sprayed it on my feet, and was already putting red ashes between my toes. I roared with pain. "Mother, I can't stand it! I'd rather not marry than have bound feet!"

"Such a little thing!" she said. "I haven't begun yet, and you are already crying about pain. So I shall bind them all the tighter."

After that I could only sit beside the fireplace and spin, or walk about slowly in the house. I was like one wearing fetters and could not go freely. No longer could I see the lovely flowers and the green grass and the lively fish and crabs.

On the birthday of the Flower Spirit, while I was asleep Mother drilled a hole in each of my ears. I woke in pain from my dream, but she had already put two red silk threads through them.

"Good! Now I have done two of your three big affairs," Mother said happily. Her idea of the three big affairs for a girl were:

1. Binding the feet,
2. Drilling the ears,
3. Marrying off.

I answered angrily and got a great scolding again.

第二章

求學時代

我的故鄉是個交通不便，風氣閉塞的農村。起伏着的山嶺環繞整個的鄉村，由資江流域發源出來的一條小河，終年不息地流着，溪水更是潺潺地奏着美妙的歌曲。一到春天，打開窗子，就可望到蔚藍的天，蔥翠的山，美麗的花草，在天空裏翱翔着的小鳥兒，的確，這是個山清水秀的鄉材。令人陶醉的仙境。

在這兒住着二百多人家，男人的職業除了耕種外，最大多數是挖煤，這是中國的產煤地，是世界有名的。

挖煤的人，不分晝夜地過着「四脚爬」的黑炭生活，他們不但皮膚被炭染黑了，連鼻孔內，耳朵裏，嘴裏，甚至吐出來的痰都是黑的，因此紳士階級，老是瞧不起他們，罵他們為「黑肚子」。

近視眼先生

我在五歲的時候，就開始識字。父親是一個舊文學家（著書三十餘種），他每年寒暑假自學校歸來時，就教我讀詩，其實我那時有很多字不認識，至於理解語句的意義，更談不到，我只知道像跟祖母唱月光光一般地學着父親的腔調吟詩。

Chapter II

SCHOOL LIFE

OUR VILLAGE WAS AS YET UNTOUCHED BY modern influences. The place was surrounded by mountains, and travel was hard. From the Tsekiang valley a little river ran endlessly the year round, making a sweet gurgling music. When spring came, we could see through the windows blue sky, green mountains, lovely flowers, and birds circling in the sky. This village between mountains and clear water made one feel dazzled as in a fairyland.

There lived here more than two hundred families. Most of the men, besides working in the fields, dug coal, for this is China's coal district and its mines are famous.

The miners passed their lives in coal dust, working day and night on all fours. Not only their skin, their nostrils, the insides of their ears were blackened, but even their spittle was black, so that the scholar class looked down upon them and called them "black bellies."

The Nearsighted Teacher

When I was five I began to learn characters. Father was an old-fashioned scholar, and he wrote more than thirty kinds of books. Every summer and winter vacation when he returned from the school he taught me poems, although I did not know many of the words, much less the meaning of the lines. I only learned to sing them with Father, just as I learned nursery rhymes with Grandmother.

When I was eight, I had memorized half of the Poems of Girl Poets at Suiyuan and Three Hundred Tang poems. I learned more and more every day. Mother taught me stories of heroines and the Girls' Classics, a book on girls' ancient

八歲的時候，那本隨園女弟子詩和唐詩三百首我背得一半了。此後一天天我認的字數增加起來，母親總是教我讀《教女遺規》，烈女傳，女兒經之類。奇怪，我不明白爲什麼每次母親教我，我總感覺枯燥無味的，我不喜歡讀這類的書。

我開始要求母親送我進私塾，她說女孩子是不要進學校的，只要多認識幾個字，多瞭解幾個貞婦烈女的故事，會記帳，會看契約便得了。原來她是希望我將來做個好的管家婆的，但當我十歲的那年，終於因了我好幾次的請求，她允許我進了那個私塾。

先生是個近視眼，他教書時，完全將臉部貼在書本上，有時字小一點的，像論語，孟子之類，他簡直連鼻子都被書壓扁了。最使人感到討厭的，是他滴在書本上的鼻涕和口水。每個學生的書，都被他弄髒了，有時他看得過意不下去了，也間或用他自己的衣袖揩去，並表示歉意，但學生沒有一個原諒他的，大家替他取了個綽號叫做髒諾子。

他的床就擺在我們的教室裏，一床黑被窩從來沒有看見他鋪過。常常有一股臭得令人作嘔的臭氣。他的身上也有一股臭氣，我們只敢背面說着他一世沒有洗過澡的話，等到見了他的面，就嚇得不敢做聲了。

我比誰都要討厭近視眼先生，因爲普通女孩子的習慣，的確要比男孩子好潔淨，他們的書上常常染些墨漬，而我是用白紙包好了書面，裏面除了先生點的紅筆外，什麼污點都沒有的，但是每次當他點書給我讀時，十回總有九回滴了口水或者鼻涕在上面的。

traditions, and things of that kind. Strange to say, I did not know why I was uninterested every time Mother taught me these. I did not like such books.

I began to beg Mother to send me to a private school. She always said that girls should not go to school. It was enough to know a few words, to understand stories of chaste women who defended their honor with their lives, to know how to keep accounts and to be able to read deeds and contracts. She wanted me to be a good housewife. But when I was ten, after repeated begging, she allowed me to go to a private school.

The teacher was very nearsighted; in class he glued his face to the book. When the print was small, like the Analects and Mencius, he just squashed his nose against the book. The trouble about this was that every pupil's book was smeared by his mucus and saliva. Sometimes when he realized this himself, he wiped the page with his sleeve and said he was sorry. But no pupil could excuse him for this and we nicknamed him, "The Dirty Blindman."

His bed was in our classroom, a bed of black quilts that was never seen made up or changed. The smell of it often made one quite sick to the stomach. As for the smell from his body, we dared only to say behind his back that he had never taken a bath in his whole life. In his presence we were afraid and did not say a word.

I disliked the teacher more than anyone else, because as a girl I liked cleanliness more than the boys did. My books were wrapped nicely in white paper, while theirs were often smeared with ink. Mine were absolutely clean, but after the teacher corrected them with his red ink, nine times out of ten there was saliva and mucus on them.

「先生，你把鼻子醫好了再來教我書好嗎？」有次我居然敢這樣說他。

「什麼？你說什麼？」他抬起頭來大吼了一聲，嚇得我幾乎從橢圓上跌了下來，同學們都望着我哈哈大笑。

未成功的自殺

冬天，接到大哥自長沙寫給母親的信，裏面有幾句話是關於我的：「鳳妹天資異人。深堪造就，明春可送其赴大同女校求學，以爲將來考女子師範之準備。近年來女禁開放，學校林立，吾家素以書香傳世，諒慈母不以妹爲女而見拒也。」

我感謝大哥，我真不懂那時他何以待我這樣好。我的前途有光明的希望了！我快活，我簡直一夜未曾合眼，我只想早點過了年就去大同女校。「到了那裏我更要努力讀書，我要讀比哥哥他們還多的書。」我時時這樣夢想着。

這時父親和二哥三哥都沒有回來，姐姐帶着孩子在家，整天哭喪着臉，爲的是想要僱一個奶媽而母親堅持不許。

「媽，我明年春天一定要到大同女校去讀書。」一天

Once I dared to ask him, "Teacher, won't you kindly wipe your nose before you teach me?"

"What? What are you saying?" he roared, which frightened me so that I fell off my stool, and all my classmates laughed at me.

The Suicide that Failed

(Sabit) 1/11/11

In the winter Mother received a letter from Elder Brother, and in it there were a few sentences concerning me: "My sister Phoenix has quite rare ability, worthy of a good education. Next Spring we should send her to Tatung Girls' School, and prepare for her to go to the Girls' Normal School in the future. Nowadays girls are beginning to go out, and there are schools all around. Our family was always one of scholars. I hope Mother will not object just because she is a girl."

For this I was very grateful to Elder Brother and I really did not understand at that time why he was so kind. My future looked bright and hopeful! I was happy, and did not close my eyes all that night. I wanted only to get through this year quickly and go to Tatung Girls' School. "When I get there I shall study very hard. I shall read more books than my brothers." Such was my dream.

At that time, Father, Second Brother, and Third Brother were not at home. Sister was staying at home with her baby. She cried all day until her eyes were swollen, because she wanted to hire a wet nurse, and Mother strictly forbade it.

In the evening Mother was weaving beside the fire, and Sister was feeding her baby at her breast. I was studying and thinking of Elder Brother's letter. I said hopefully, "Mother, I do want to go to Tatung Girls'

晚上，母親在爐邊紡紗，姐姐抱着孩子在喂奶，我讀一回書後忽然想起大哥的信來這樣誠懇地對母親說。

「還想讀什麼書？女孩子讀了像你這多的書，已經很夠了。你又不是男人，要讀那麼多書幹什麼？」她完全沒有把我的話放在心頭。

「大哥不是來信要送我去大同女校嗎？」我的聲音仍是很溫柔的。

「他懂得什麼？女孩子是娘管的，你明年要開始繡花疋，腳也沒有裹小，將來嫁到婆家去，人家一定說做娘的沒教訓。」

「媽，我要讀書，我不是和哥哥他們一樣的人嗎？」
「笑話！一樣的人！他們讀了書可以做官賺錢，你是女孩子，只能做個賢妻良母，侍奉翁姑，管理家產，試想想你讀了書有什麼用處？」

從此以後，我不敢提到我的母親讀書問題了。我知道是講不清的，惟有等待父親回來，也許有希望。

經過父親和祖母的婉勸，要母親送我再讀一年，她却誓死不肯。後來又經過姐姐，嫂嫂，姨母們的請求，她仍然不答應。當我知道再沒有希望的時候，於是便下了自殺的決心。

在鄉村，我所知道的自殺方法，只有下面幾點：

(一)吊頸，(二)投河，(三)吃火柴，(四)吃鴉片煙，(五)吞戒子，(六)用刺刀刺破喉管。

School next year."

"Still thinking of studying?" she said, casually. "What you have learned already is enough for a girl. You are not a boy. What is the use of reading so many books?" She did not even take my words seriously!

"Didn't Elder Brother write and say that he wanted me to go to school?" I said, still softly.

"What does he know? Training girls is my business. You will start embroidering next year. Your feet are still too big. If you are like this when you marry, people will say that your mother did not bring you up properly."

"But I want to study," I said. "Am I not a human being like my brothers?"

"What a joke! Like your brothers! They study to become officials and earn money, but you are a girl. You can only be a good wife and good mother, and learn to serve your parents-in-law well and run a home. What is the use of your studying?"

From then on, I dared not mention the question again. I knew that Mother could not be persuaded. There might be some hope when my father came back.

Grandmother and Father did try to persuade Mother to let me go for one year, but she would not yield. Sister-in-law and my aunts all came to plead with her, but still she would not. So I lost all hope of continuing school. When I realized this my heart was broken and I decided to commit suicide.

In our village, all the ways I knew of committing suicide were:

1. Hanging by a rope, 2. Jumping into the river, 3. Swallowing matches, 4. Eating opium, 5. Swallowing a

小孩究竟是小孩，想自殺而又怕痛，真是有些滑稽！我那時天天計劃着用什麼方法去自殺、結果是：

第一，我想起了那次看到竊笛嫂吊頸死時，舌頭吐出來的慘狀太可怕了，因此不敢。

第二投河的，肚子會被水脹得像鼓一般地大，而且會給男人脫出衣服把水抽出來，我不願意這樣做。（可憐那時我的腦子裏已中了封建社會的毒！）

第三火柴的氣味太難聞了。

第四沒有方法買到鴉片烟。

第五沒有戒子！即使有，我也不敢吞，因為我還沒有忘記那次吞下一個銅錢的痛苦。

第六假使刺不死而痛得要命，或者又被他們救活，那豈不糟糕嗎？最後決定不吃飯躺在床上餓死。

睡了兩整天了，家裏的人都以與我害病，母親連忙請醫生來看。「沒有病」，醫生說，原來他就是那位近視眼先生。

姐姐看我整天不吃一點東西，祇是流着淚，好幾次跑來床前安慰我。

「好妹妹，你告訴我吧，有什麼事我一定替你辦到。」

「什麼人都辦不到。」

「告訴我什麼事情。」

「我……我……要……讀書。」

ring. 6. Cutting my throat with a knife.

I was after all only a child; I wanted to commit suicide, but I was afraid of pain. I realize now that it was quite funny! Every day I debated with myself as to the best way of suicide. The results were as follows:

As for the first way, I had seen how frightful Yiti's wife looked when she hanged herself and her tongue stuck out; so I dared not.

Second, jumping in the river would cause my stomach to swell like a big drum and men would have to take my dress off and pump the water out. I was not willing to permit that. My mind was so poisoned with ancient ideas!

Third, matches had an awful smell.

Fourth, there was no way of buying opium.

Fifth, I had no rings, and even if I had one, I would not dare swallow it, for I remembered the suffering when a penny had stuck in my throat.

Sixth, if the knife did not cut clean through my throat, and I did not die, it would be terrible.

At last I decided to starve myself to death in bed.

I stayed two whole days in bed, and everyone thought I was sick. Mother immediately called the neighborhood teacher who was also a doctor. "She is not sick," he said.

My sister came to my bed and tried to comfort me. She wept with me.

"Good Sister," she said, "tell me if there is anything you wish that I can do."

"No one can do it!" I said.

"Tell me what is the matter," she persisted.

"I want . . . I want to study," I said at last.

Mother seemed to know that I was fasting because I

母親像知道我爲了要讀書不吃飯似的故意不睬我，使我的自殺之心更加堅決。「母親是最愛女兒的，爲什麼我快到死的地步了，她也不答應我的要求呢？」我開始對母愛懷疑了。

到了第三天，母親見我如此固執，就答應了我的要求，不過要在二年之後送我去讀書，她說在這兩年中要考察我的脾氣，假若變好了就允許，否則，還是要將我早點嫁出去。

就在這一綫的曙光中，救出我弱小的生命。

小學時代的生活

入小學是在我十二歲的那年。當我踏進學校的門，看見許多活潑天真的女孩子在拍皮球，跳繩時，我簡直自己懷疑自己走進了天堂。我發狂了，內心裏充滿了說不出的快樂和希望，可是有一件事使我深深地感到苦痛的，就是我的兩腳還是緊緊地被纏着帶子，本來我可解開不裹腳，但是母親的條件是不裹腳，就不許我讀書，這叫我怎麼辦呢？這時和我一樣的小腳姑娘很多，她們都感到同樣的痛苦。幾個天足的老同學，祚芳，士開，她們都用剪子來剪我們的腳布，每天來檢查我們的腳解放沒有？本來爲了求學，我寧可忍受裹腳的痛苦，但看到人家都是大腳，而自己却是三寸金蓮，未免太丟臉太難着了。最後我不顧一切的也將裹布完全解開丟了，下大雨時，我也像大足的同學一樣赤着腳在天井裏玩水。

wanted to study, and purposely paid no attention to me, which made me all the more determined to die. "Mother loves her children so much, and yet why does she still refuse to consent when I am about to die?" I said, and I doubted her love.

But on the third day, when she saw I was so stubborn, Mother consented. She said that for two years she was going to watch my behavior. If I improved after those two years, then I could go to school. If not, she would marry me off.

Through this ray of hope my small life was saved.

I Enter School

When I was twelve I entered the school. About the school door, I saw many happy girls, playing games and skipping, and I thought I was in Heaven. The happiness and hope in my heart could not be expressed. But there was one thing which troubled me deeply. My feet were still tightly bound. I could have taken the bandages off; but Mother had laid down the rule that if I did not keep my feet bound, I could not go to school. There were other small-foot girls like me, and they felt as I did. Some of the older pupils who had natural feet, such as Tsoufang and Shihhsien, brought scissors and wanted to cut our foot bandages. They looked every day to see if our feet were still bound. At first I was willing to endure the pain for the privilege of coming to school. Then, when I saw the big feet of the others and looked down at my own three-inch "golden lotuses," I thought mine were too disgraceful and too ugly for words. So I ceased to care and took off my bandages. And when it rained, I took off my shoes too and waded in the pools in the courtyard like my

開始與小說發生關係

母親因為看見我的小腳已變了大腳，她非常氣憤而且傷心，她責備我不遵母命，同時也埋怨學校太不顧家長的體面了。自然，在她看來一雙蒲扇大的腳是最丟臉的事，何況辛辛苦苦費了多少精力才裹成五寸長的小腳呢？

她再也不願送我讀書了，但我苦苦地向父親哀求，因為他已經調查了我在甲組中是成績最好的一個，所以他允許我繼續求學，而且把我帶去縣城，這學期就改進了縣立高等女子小學校。

那時大同鐵到縣裏去求學的女孩還只有我一個，因為言語不通的關係，初進去一兩個月，我簡直沒有一個朋友。望到她們有說有笑的在那裏談天，我總不敢走攏去，下課後，老是一個人躲在寢室裏看書。不是溫習功課，就是看從圖書室裏借來的雜誌等。那時我最愛看富有冒險性的探偵小說。

忽然有一天發現我的名字貼在佈告牌上，上面有一行要我去取書的小字，我連忙跑去把條子撕下去領書，一看原來是二哥從山西寄來的。我仔細地打開，裏面包着兩本

big-foot schoolmates.

Beginning to Read Novels

Mother saw that my small feet were getting big again, and was very angry and hurt. She scolded me for disobeying her, and at the same time said that the school authorities took too little thought of the face of the parents. It was true, of course, that in her eyes a pair of fanlike big feet were a great disgrace. How could she be satisfied with five-inch feet, as the result of all the trouble she had taken to make them small?

She was not willing to let me go to school again. But I begged Father very hard, and because he already knew that my work was the best in Group A, he permitted me to continue. This time, I went to the Country Public Girls' School and he accompanied me to the country town.

At that time I was the only girl there from Tatung. Because I did not understand the dialect, I didn't have a single friend for the first couple of months. When they talked and laughed, I never dared to approach. I always stayed alone in my bedroom; when not preparing my lessons, I read periodicals borrowed from the library. At that time I liked most to read detective stories full of adventure.

One day I saw my name on a notice on the bulletin board, which told me to go to the office and get a package. I immediately took the slip down and ran to the office. It was a package which Second Brother had sent me from Shenshi. I opened it carefully and found there were two brand new books, one of them New Lectures and the other a collection of short stories. I was so happy that I said foolishly to people I met, whether they were

嶄新的書，一本是新讀講集，一本是短篇小說集。我快樂得什麼似的，不管人家聽不聽，總是見着了同學便說着這樣愚蠢的話：『我哥哥替我寄書來了，貼了很多的郵票，是從山西寄來的呢。』

因為自己不會演講，每次登台，總是駭得臉青唇白，說不出三句話來，因此我連看了演講集三個字都要頭痛，再不要說打開讀牠了。就在當天晚上，我就開始看短篇小說，這是胡適翻譯的，文字還流利，我一口氣就看完了半本。我開始對新文學發生無限的好感和崇拜了。這本薄薄的短篇小說集，我一連看了三遍還不見得重覆，而且好像越看越不忍釋手似的。

那時學生的成績和作文，圖畫，習字，手工等凡是好的，都要貼出來，我的字寫得最醜，最潦草，從來沒有上過壁，也沒有打過一個『甲』字；倒是幾句歪文，常常被貼出來的。父親特地為我買的趙帖顏帖（他要我隨便選擇一帖臨摹，）我從來沒有打開過。有次他看了我寫給他的一封信，字跡奇醜得不成樣子，特地過河來罵我：

『你究竟習的什麼帖？字寫得這麼怪難看的。』

『我……我……』

『什麼帖？』

『父親皺起眉毛幾乎要伸手打我了。』

『鳴岡帖。』

『什麼？』

『爸，我沒有臨帖，我是寫我自己的字呢。』

他看我向他撒嬌，於是又笑起來了。

listening or not: "My brother has sent me a package of two books from Shanshi, with many stamps on it."

I had never been able to make a speech. Every time I went on the stage my face turned green and my lips turned white, and I could not say more than three sentences. Therefore when I saw the title of the book *New Lectures*, I got a headache and never wanted to open it. But that night, I began to read the short stories, which were translated by Hu Shih. The style was easy, and I finished half the book at one sitting. I began to have a boundless respect for the new literature. This book of stories I read three times in succession, without ever being bored. The more I read the more it interested me, and the more unwilling I was to let it out of my hands.

At that time, if a child's work in composition, drawing, handwriting, or artcraft was good, it was posted on the wall. Some of my compositions were posted up. But my handwriting was most ugly and was never posted up; I never got an "A." My father bought me models of calligraphy in the Chao style and the Yen style, which he wanted me to copy. But I never opened them. Once when he read one of my letters in which the writing was horrible, he came across the river especially to scold me.

"What models of calligraphy are you using?" he said, "Your writing is wretched."

"I.... I...."

"What kind?"

He knit his eyebrows, as if he wanted to stretch out his hand and hit me.

"It is in the style of Mingkang," I said.

"What?"

教會學校

起初聽到母親允許我去益陽升學的消息，我無論如何也不敢相信，直到她親自對我說：「你大哥在益陽當校長，你嫂嫂也不肯回來，你天天吵着要讀書，現在就去找他，要他給你讀好了。」

這時我真不知要如何感謝我的母親，我覺得她是全世界最好，最體貼兒女，最痛愛兒女的母親！從家裏到益陽聽說有六百多里水路，坐民船最快也得要四天，這麼遠的路，母親也允許我去，真是我夢想不到事。

到了益陽的第三天，哥哥就送我進了信義女校，這是一個挪威國的老處女愛娜辦的（她有四十多歲了，還沒有出嫁。）在益陽要算是個頂完備的學校，因為自初小、高小，中學校，師範以至大學，都有很好的設備和教師，學生共有二千多人，大家都在「上帝」的統治之下生活着。

我是一個「蠻子」，很小的時候就像男孩一樣勇敢，我什麼都不怕，自然連「洋鬼子」也在內。

從鄉下來的姑娘，開始過着住在四層洋樓的生活，簡直比叫化子做了皇帝還要快活。這裏不但不收學費膳費，而且赤貧的學生，學校還要津貼她零用。我的環境比較好

"Father, I did not use any model. I wrote in my own style."

Then he saw that I was trying to tease him and smiled again.

Missionary School

When I heard that Mother had consented to let me go to Yiyang, I could not believe it, until she told me herself, "Your Elder Brother is the school principal at Yiyang, and your sister-in-law won't come home. Since you say every day that you want to study, you might as well go to him and study under his care."

It was over six hundred li to Yiyang by water, and it took four days by boat at the quickest. I had not even dreamed Mother would permit me to go so far! How grateful I was! I felt that she was the best, the most considerate, the most loving of mothers.

The third day after I arrived at Yiyang, Elder Brother took me to school. The principal of the Hsinyi Girls' School was a Norwegian named Anna. She was over forty and not yet married. The school was the best in Yiyang, because there were primary, middle, and normal schools, and college grades all with full equipment and teachers. There were over two thousand students, all living under "God's control."

But I was a "savage." Ever since I was small, I had been like a boy and afraid of nothing, including, of course, the "foreign devils."

For a girl from the country to live for the first time in a four-story foreign building was greater joy than for a beggar to become a king. Here we did not have to pay tuition and board, and the poorest pupils were even given

，因此一學期交了膳費十元。的確，在這樣舒服而不花錢的學校讀書，沒有一個不是歡天喜地的。房子是這般幽靜而寬大，空氣特別新鮮，資江就繞在學校的後面，即使是炎熱的夏天，清涼的河風，常常吹得我們昏昏欲睡。每當夕陽西下，最後的紅光射在水中蕩漾的時候，我們便爬上了三樓，三五成羣的同學，並肩遠眺往來的帆船；漁人唱着美麗的歌曲，慢慢地搖着輕舟，踏上他們的歸程；微微的江風一陣陣送來濃郁的花香，浮在水上的帆船正像海鷗般輕飄，隔岸的山嶽，籠罩着一層薄薄的灰幕，這是一幅多麼富有詩意的畫圖啊！

·最美麗的，是夏天的早晨。小鳥兒正在枝頭唱着晨歌，河風吹着依依的楊柳，擺動的小草的時候，太陽從東邊蔚藍的雲裏爬了出來。她像一個初出浴的小女，羞答答地含着微笑慢慢地移動着；一會兒她的光芒射到江中，江水馬上被照得通紅，好像漲滿了一江血水。漸漸地羣山都由金黃而變成赤色了。呵！多麼美麗的血紅的太陽呵！牠的光輝是何等的莊嚴偉大，牠照過了天上人間，大千世界。

我最愛太陽，只要不下雨的天，我總是一個人先起。有時雖看不到太陽出來，但也並不失望，因為我呼吸了別人未曾呼吸到的新鮮空氣。我還每天練習打啞鈴，使得我的身體強健。

同學都待我很好。她們都喜歡和我玩。教師也都說我

pocket money. Since my family was better off than some of the others, I paid ten dollars a term for board. There was no one who was not enjoying school. The buildings and rooms were large and quiet, the air was fresh, and the Tsekiang wound its way just back of the school. Even on a hot day, the cool river breeze would blow so gently as to make us sleepy. At sunset, when beams of red light sparkled on the water, we would climb up to the third floor, three or four of us together, and watch the sailing boats go up and down the river. The sailboats floated on the water like seagulls. The fishermen sang their songs as they slowly paddled the light boats on their way home; the soft breeze brought us the heavy fragrance of the flowers, and the mountains across the river were covered by thin gray clouds, a rich, poetic picture!

The most beautiful moments were the summer mornings while the birds were singing on the tips of the branches, and the willows swaying, and the green grass bowing before the river wind; and the sun rose from the east, climbing out of the blue clouds like a maiden slowly stepping out from a bath, smiling shyly. After a while the light shone directly on the river, and the water became red like a stream of blood; then the color of the mountains changed from gold to gray. Ah! what a beautiful sun! How gloriously its light shone upon the big world.

I like the sun. Unless it rained I was always the first to get up. Even when the sun did not come out, I was not disappointed, for I was breathing the air no one had breathed before. By way of exercise, I practiced dumbbells to make my body strong.

My schoolmates were very good to me and played

聰明，雖然曾經在太陽常照英國旗一篇文章裏，我表示了對帝國主義的不滿，沒有照着國文老師的做法，但他也並沒有罵我。同學們都稱我為快樂的王子，因為我那時不愁功課，一天到晚總是笑着，玩着，跳着，正像小燕子似的。

但誰也不曉得，我自從入校的那天起，就感到有一種深沉的苦痛壓在心頭。這就是我不信上帝，不高興讀聖經，以及什麼新約和舊約。我不願意在每次吃飯時做着禱告：「我們在天上的父，」我高興唱歌，但我不願唱「上帝愛我愛無邊，及到世界必保全」的讚美詩。

爲了不高興做禱告，我寧願每一天早晨和晚間或吃飯的時候躲到廁所裏去受苦。有次被吳先生發覺了我常常吃飯遲到，他叫我到訓育部去。

「你爲什麼每次吃飯時要比別人後到？」她問我。

「我沒有聽見搖鈴。」

「幹什麼去了。」

「讀聖經。」

「真的你這樣用功嗎？你不是不喜歡聖經的嗎？」

「爲什麼不是真的？誰說我不喜歡讀聖經？以前我沒有感到書裏面的樂趣，現在我覺得祇有上帝是世界上唯一的救星，我要信仰他，崇拜他！」

「在上帝的面前不要說謊話，以後每天吃飯時你都要來作禱告。」他微笑着摸我的頭髮。

with me, and the teacher liked me. Once in an essay called "The Sun Never Sets on the British Empire," I expressed my disapproval of British imperialism, against the teacher's suggestions, but she did not say anything against me. I was as happy as a princess, playing and romping and never worrying about my school work.

No one knew that from the day I entered the school I had a heavy weight pressing on my heart. It was that I did not believe in God, and I did not like to read the Bible. I did not like saying the Lord's Prayer before meals, "Our Father, Who art in Heaven,..." I liked singing the hymns, but I did not like singing: "The love of God is perfect, When we die, He will protect us."

Wanting to avoid the prayer, I would sit in the privy and suffer every morning and evening or at meal times. Miss Wu discovered that I was being late to meals and told me to go to the matron's office.

"Why are you always late in going to meals?" she asked me.

"I did not hear the bell."

"What were you doing?"

"Reading the Bible."

"Are you really so hard-working?" she asked. "Isn't it true that you don't like the Bible?"

"Why shouldn't I speak the truth?" I replied. "Who said that I did not like the Bible? I was not interested in reading the Bible before, but now I know that God is the only Savior of the world. I believe in Him and worship Him."

She smiled and patted my head. "Don't tell lies before God. Henceforth, come to the prayer before meals."

「當然！」口裏雖然這樣答着，心裏却在想：「哈哈，上帝知道……」

那時我的知識幼稚，腦筋也很簡單，我沒有什麼高深的理論反對上帝，我只覺得上帝這東西是靈無的，「凡信上帝的人都能得救。」真是笑話！爲什麼每個星期三許多穿藍呢衣服來做禮拜的窮人們，他們永遠是如此窮得沒有飯吃呢？上帝不能賜給他們衣，食，住，也不能替他們醫治疾病，更不能使他們找到職業。至於什麼貧苦的人，他們說是因爲有罪，所以上帝處罰他們，更是屁話，我只曉得，人就是創造世界的上帝，什麼都是自己靠自己，而且我根本否認世間有所謂上帝這東西存在。

中學時代的生活

這是應該特別感謝父母親的！母親在二哥和三哥的替我求情之下，居然允許我去投考長沙省立第一女師（這是一所公立學校，學費，膳費，書籍費一律由學校供給，每縣每次取錄二名），父親更親自送我到長沙，他很替我操心，以爲一個高小還沒畢業的孩子一定會名落孫山的，何況報名投考的又那麼多，然而我終於考上了。但我除了國文史地而外，別的功課我幾乎都趕不上。好在我肯用功，不到兩個月就沒有什麼困難了，同學們都對我很好，進去不久她們都和我成了好朋友。我們的生活，比起普通的一般學生來要快樂多了，因爲我們有一位愛護我們像愛護他的孩子似的校長——思想前進，博學多才的徐特立先生。

"Certainly!" I muttered with my mouth, but in my heart I said, "Ha, ha! God knows...."

My knowledge was childish and my mind was simple; I had no profound reasons for not believing in God. I just felt that there was no such thing as God. "Anyone who believes in God is saved." That seemed really a joke. Why did the people who came to church on Sundays in poor dresses always stay poor? God could not give them dresses, food, board, could not heal their sicknesses, and what is more could not find them jobs. As for saying that God would punish these poor people by making them poor because they had sinned, this was "nasty talk." I did not think there was a God anyway. I only knew that men were the gods who were building the world and must depend entirely on themselves.

High School

I have to thank my parents especially because, under the persuasion of Second and Third Brothers, Alpha now permitted me to go to the Changsha Girls' Normal School. This was a public school where there was no charge for anything. Only two pupils from each country could be accepted. Father took me to Changsha himself. He was worried for me, because a girl who had not finished elementary school would probably fail, and besides there were so many candidates. But I passed. I had difficulty in keeping up with the classes, except in Chinese, history, and geography. But I worked hard, and after two months I had no difficulties. My schoolmates were all pleasant to me and some became my friends. Our life was happier than that of the average student, because we had for our principal the learned Mr. Hsu Techi, who treated the

我們都叫他做「外婆」，因為他太愛我們，完全將我們當做自己的外甥一般看待。

但學校裏的規則很嚴，他禁止我們穿小背心，禁止我們吃辣椒，晚上下了自修後，他不許我們看書，常常到了一點鐘他還沒睡，爲的是要查每一間寢室是否還有人講話，假若有一個人去廁所他也要問一聲「爲什麼還不睡」？

到考試時，大家都害怕他。因爲隨便你站在那個黑角裏，他都要用手電照着催你去睡。許多同學爲了不敢燃蠟燭預備功課，只好站在路燈下或者廁所裏去看書，但沒有一次不被外婆趕走的。

冬天一來，教室裏很早就生了炭盆，他便每天囑咐我們都穿衣服，不要受寒。夏天又替我們將窗戶打開，流通空氣。

那時學校裏幾乎成了一種喜歡吃蠶豆的風氣，同學們老是喜歡兩個三個的一字排行着在校內散步，一面走一面剝着蠶豆，滿地着散殼子。外婆看到了並不一開口就責備她們，只是靜悄悄地彎下腰來一個個的把壳子拾起，正在吃得津津有味的學生，當然想不到後面有一個在用手替她們掃地的外婆丫頭；等到她們走了不少的路，外婆才輕輕地生怕驚動了她們似的說道：「殼子少丟一點吧，我這老腰已經痠痛了呢。」她們聽到外婆的聲音，嚇得立刻站住

students like his own children. We called him "Mr. Grandmother," because he was motherly to us.

But the rules of the school were strict. He forbade us to wear "little vests" which bound our breasts tightly, to eat pepper, or to read at night after our study period. Often, he did not go to bed until one in the morning, because he had to see that no one was talking in bed. If anyone went to the toilet, he would ask, "Why aren't you sleeping?"

When the time of examinations came everybody was afraid of him. No matter in what dark corner you were, he would spot you out with a flashlight and hurry you to bed. Many students dared not light the candles to prepare their work, but stood under the corridor lights or in the toilet and read. But no one escaped Grandmother's eyes.

When winter came early in the season, the classrooms were heated with charcoal basins. He asked us to put on more clothing every day, and not to catch cold. In summer, he opened the windows to let the fresh air in.

At that time it was the custom to eat tsantou (a kind of beans). The students used to gather in groups of twos and threes and walk about eating tsantou and littering the ground with hard shells. When Grandmother saw this, he did not even scold but quietly bent down and picked up the shells. The students eating the delicious tsantou never suspected that their "grandmother slave" was picking up the shells with his own hands. Not until they had gone quite a distance did he say softly, in order not to startle them, "You might throw fewer; my old back is getting sore." When they heard they immediately

，回頭一看，只見丟下的穀子，都到了外婆的手裏，這時她們臉紅紅地才說不出半句話來。從此不但她們不敢丟蠶豆穀子或花生殼在地上，就是別的同学也不敢隨便丟紙條了。他是這樣一個完全用人格感化學生的教育家，怎叫我們不佩服他不服從他呢？

還有一次，他查到了兩個學生的品性不好，有一晚她們中間有一個沒有回校，雖然是請了假回家的，但外婆已經知道她那晚在什麼地方。於是第二天找她來談話，那學生起初堅持着說回家去了，外婆知道她是爲了害怕開除不敢說出真情來，他連忙改換了語氣說：『我已經去過你的家裏了，你母親說你並沒有回去，而且我已知道你昨夜是在什麼地方，不要緊，你把一切明白的告訴我吧，究竟你是爲了什麼要到旅館裏去，是爲了性的需要去尋找快樂，還是有什麼不得已的苦衷呢？』

她流下淚了，由她臉上的表情，外婆知道她是個可憐的女孩，於是連忙說了許多安慰她，不會開除她的話，然後她一五一十地把家裏的窮困，和爲什麼走上這條路來的苦衷詳細地說了。外婆立刻答應她：『我每月給你的家用二十元，從今天起，你只能在學校好好用功讀書，再也不許去外面「亂來」了。』

stopped, and finding saw that the shells they had thrown down were all in Grandmother's hands. This made their faces red, and they could not say a word for shame. From then on, they dared not throw any more shells on the ground, and the rest of the students also stopped throwing waste paper. So he tried to correct others' behavior by setting a personal example. How could we help respecting him?

Another time he found out that two students were not behaving properly. One night one of them did not return to school. Grandmother knew where she was that night, so the next day he told her to come to him and asked where she had been all night, and she insisted that she had gone home. Grandmother knew that she was afraid of being dismissed from school and was not telling the truth. He changed his tone immediately and said, "I have already been to your home, and your mother said that you had not returned. And I know where you were last night. Never mind, tell me the truth, why did you go to the hotel? Is it that you went there for enjoyment, or because you had some reason hard to explain?"

Tears rolled down her face, and from her expression Grandmother knew that she was a pitiful child. So he said much to comfort her and did not dismiss her. Then the girl poured out her story of the terrible condition of her family, which was the reason why she had to earn money at the hotel. Grandmother said, "I will give you twenty dollars every month, and from now on, you are to devote yourself to your studies and are not to go outside and run wild."

He believed in free social intercourse between men

他是主張社交公開的，從來不檢查學生的書信，「檢查有什麼用呢？情感是沒有方法禁止的，青年人要戀愛，就讓她去戀好了，只要她不荒廢學業。」有次他這樣對一位主張要檢查書信的女管理員說，駭得她忙吐出兩寸長的舌頭來，半天說不出一句話。



and women and never attempted to censor the students' letters. Once he said to a woman on the staff who proposed censoring the mails, "What is the use? Human emotions are things that you cannot censor or forbid by law. If the young girls want some romance, let them have some romance, so long as they do not neglect their studies." This so horrified the woman that she stuck out her tongue two inches and said no more.

讀大讀其下，身言太能能，五二在月下不...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...



第三章

從軍時代

我至死也忘不了我的二哥，能夠去當兵，可以說大部分都是他幫助我的。

一九二六年的暑假，我陪他在嶽麓山的道鄉祠養肺病，那時我的腦海中還深深地印着那個影子的笑容，我的精神很頹廢，整天都不想說一句話，只是看着牡丹亭，燕子箋，西廂，琵琶記……一類的無聊書，二哥非常生氣，他有一天，居然寫了一封信告訴父親，而且當面大大地罵了我一頓，有幾句話，至今還刻在我的腦膜上：

「女人，真是沒有用的！時代的血鐘響了，你還在夢裏替着打鼾。這些才子佳人，千篇一律的糜爛故事，早就應該拋棄不看的，你是個覺悟了的女性，又極喜歡新文學的，爲什麼不讀革命的作品呢？」

他給我看共產主義ABC，社會主義淺說，以及其他幾本關於社會科學，革命理論方面的書。當我對於這些書發生了興趣的時候，那個影子便在我的腦海裏慢慢地淡了下來，我寫文章的對象，也轉了方向。因爲住在鄉間和農民接近的機會很多，我開始描寫他們的生活，他們的痛苦，在三哥主編的通俗日報上發表了。

是報名投考軍校的前一天晚上，我和三哥在明德中學二哥住的房子裏討論我可不可以去當兵的問題。

Chapter III

IN THE ARMY

I shall never forget Second Brother, because I was able to join the army chiefly through his help.

In the summer vacation of 1926 I went with him to Taohsiang Temple on Yolushan, where he was taking a cure for tuberculosis. I was occupied in my love affair and I felt dejected the whole day and did not want to talk. I was reading Peony Pavilion, Pigeon's Letter, Western Chamber, and the Romance of Pips. Second Brother was angry, and one day he wrote a letter to my father and at the same time scolded me severely in words that I could not forget:

"Women are really useless! The bell of the New Age has struck and you are still asleep! You should have thrown away these boy-and-girl love stories long ago. You are a modern, awakened girl and you like modern literature. Why don't you read some revolutionary books?"

He let me read the A-B-C of Communism, An Introduction to Socialism, some books about social science, and revolutionary treatises. When I began to be interested in these, I gradually forgot the image of my love. I began to write about the revolution, and because I lived quite close to the peasants, I wrote stories of the farmers and their sufferings, and Third Brother published them in the Tungshu Jihpao, a daily in simple language for the common people.

The night before I enrolled in the military academy I was sitting with Third Brother in Second Brother's room at the Mingteh Middle School and discussing the question

「我反對她去，軍隊中的生活是乾燥的，機械的，每天只知道「立正」「稍息」，絕對服從，她的腦筋也會變得簡單而且遲鈍。當兵，對於一個有文藝天才的人是不適宜的，何況她的身體也許受不了那種苦。」這是三哥的主張。

「你的見解完全是錯誤的！她如果想要產生有血有力的作品，不平凡的作品，那就非經過一些不平凡的生活不可！去當兵，正是有鍛鍊她的體格，培養她的思想，供給她文章材料的好機會，這對於她絕對只有益而無害的。」

三哥只得放棄他的主張不和我們爭論了。

至於我自己，那更不要說了，即使他們都反對，我也是要去的！因為這年冬天母親要強迫我出嫁，要想逃脫這個難關，就非離開長沙不可！但任何處去呢？一個未滿二十歲的孩子，身無半文，帶着一顆從小就受了創傷的心，能往何處去呢。

二哥是特別同情我的，他因為自己受包辦婚姻的苦痛太深，所以他極力慫恿我去當兵，他說：「這是唯一解放你自己的路，只有參加革命，婚姻問題和你未來的出路問題，才有辦法。」

我相信，那時女同學去當兵的動機，十有八九是爲了想脫離封建家庭的壓迫，和尋找自己出路的。可是等到穿上軍服，拿着槍桿，思想又不同了。那時誰不以全世界的十二萬五千萬的被壓迫民族解放的擔子放在自己的肩上呢。

of joining the army.

"I am against it," Third Brother said, speaking to Second Brother. "The life of the army is very hard and trying. It consists of drilling and commands and obeying. Her mind will become dulled and simple. A clever girl like her should not be a soldier. Besides, her health may not be able to stand the army life."

"Your point of view is all wrong!" said Second Brother. "If she wants to produce strong and uncommon writing, she must go through an uncommon life experience! The army is just the thing to train her body and mind, and supply her with good material for her writing. It will do her no harm and a great deal of good."

Third Brother had to give up the argument.

As for myself, I need hardly say I would have gone even if they all objected. For that winter Mother was going to force me to marry. I had to leave Changsha to prevent this. But where to? A girl not yet twenty, penniless and with a broken heart—where could she go?

Second Brother greatly sympathized with me. Because his own marriage was unhappy, he very much wanted me to join the army. He said, "This is your only road to freedom—join the revolution. Only so can you find a way out both in regard to the marriage and your future."

I believe that nine out of ten of the girl students who joined the army at the time did so because they wanted to get away from the pressure of their feudalistic families and make their own future. Once in uniform and carrying a gun, their thoughts were different. But at that time every one of them was thinking that the responsibility of emancipating the millions of women of China

被開除了

這是滑稽的事，還沒有踏進學校之門，已經被開除了，事實是這樣的：

最初招生委員會本來只規定招收男生一百名，女生二十名的，但因為投考的有三千餘人，並且程度好的大多，又經過考生全體請求增加名額，所以取了二百名男生，五十名女生。誰知到了武昌，他們又改變計劃了，據說奉了上面的命令，這次招生務的是造就各省革命的領袖人材，所以每省的數額要平均，湖南這次錄取的太多，照理需要減少三分之二。他們的分配是男生八十名，女生二十名，用覆試的方法，來淘汰其餘的一百五十名。

這消息傳到我們的耳裏，簡直像宣佈死刑似的感到絕望與悲哀！誰的眼眶都被蒙上了一塊黑布，光明的前途，又被黑暗籠罩着了！

「不行！我們絕對不能被淘汰，我們要求全請入校。」一位不知名的男同學，這樣首先提出來，隨即大家附和着。

其中有二位同學，一位男同學名李任伯和一位女同學鐵大姐，所說的話最激昂慷慨。

任伯說：「這簡直是個大笑話，革命人材只嫌少，不

was upon their shoulders.

Dismissed

The funny thing was that I was dismissed by the military academy before I stepped inside the gate. It was like this:

It had originally been decided by the committee on entrance to take in only one hundred boys and twenty girls. But there were over three thousand applicants, many of them of quite good standing. So after a joint appeal by the candidates, they said they would admit two hundred boys and fifty girls. When we got to Wuchang they had changed their minds. They said that, according to orders from their superiors, the school was for the purpose of training revolutionary leaders of all provinces, and therefore each province should be equally represented. There were too many from the province of Human. They were going to eliminate two-thirds of those already admitted and take in only eighty boys and twenty girls now. There was to be a series of second examinations.

When we heard this news it was like hearing a death sentence pronounced upon us. We were in despair. Our bright future was darkened as if by a screen across our eyes.

A boy student whose name I did not know said, "No! We won't be eliminated. We will demand that all be admitted," and everybody agreed.

There were two students, a boy named Li Jenpo, and a girl named Big Sister Iron, who spoke in most emphatic tones.

Jenpo said, "This is just a joke. People are only afraid that there are not enough trained revolutionists—

怕多——越多越好，豈有限制多少人革命的道理？這次湖南的學生投筆從戎的這麼踴躍，是證明他們的思想是前進的，他們有奮鬥犧牲的精神，他們對於革命，有了深淵的認識，這種現象是可喜的，樂觀的，站在革命的立場上來說，應該特別愛護這班青年，培植他們，鼓勵他們為國家努力，為整千整萬的勞苦大眾謀解放；而現在恰恰相反，政府却要制止他們革命，要他們仍然回到學校去讀死書；名義上是說平均發展革命勢力，實際是阻礙富有革命性的青年前進，我們不能被淘汰，無論如何，我們應該全體入校的！」

一陣暴雷似的掌聲響過後，鐵大姐忽然從人叢中站起來了，她的嗓子是粗大的：「各位同學們，親愛的姊妹們！這次我們來當兵，是下了犧牲決心才來的，我們脫離了家庭來投身革命，目的在救出痛苦的羣衆和痛苦的自己；尤其我們女同學從軍，是開中國破天荒的先例，政府既然把男女一律看待，使我們也有效命國家社會的機會，那是我們婦女的幸福，人類的光明。大家正在歡天喜地的時候，突然得着要減少一百五十名的消息，實在太令人傷心了！女同學們，我們想想，如果真的被送回去怎樣辦呢？家庭不認我們是女兒了，學校不認我們是學生了，我們往何

not that there are too many. The more the better. Can you imagine anyone trying to limit the number of revolutionists? The fact that so many Hunan students threw down their pens to join the army only proves that our Hunan people are more advanced in thought, and have fighting spirit and understand the revolution. This is something to be happy about. From the point of view of the revolution, these young people ought to be especially valued. They ought to be given a good training and encouraged to fight for their country and for the freedom of the downtrodden masses. But now they are doing the very opposite. The government is stopping them from taking part in the revolution. They want them to go back to school and read their dead books. They claim that they are trying to get a balanced development of the revolutionary forces, but in fact they are trying to block the path of revolutionary youth. We will not be dismissed. We must all be admitted!"

There was thundering applause. Big Sister Iron stood up and said in a loud, rough voice, "Fellow students, dear sisters! We have come to join the army with full determination. We have left our homes to join the revolution, with the object of emancipating both the suffering masses and ourselves. The enlisting of us girl students in the army is an unprecedented event in China's history. Since the government has decided to treat boys and girls alike and give both the opportunity to serve our country and our society, it is both the fortune of our womanhood and the portent of glory for all mankind. If we are sent back, where can we go? Our families won't receive us as daughters; the schools won't receive us as students. We

處去呢？大家有革命的精神，犧牲的決心，而沒有機會，沒有地方能容納我們。革命是只有向前，決無後退的，我們不願回去，每個人都要進軍校！」

他們的像鐵一般的句子，激動了每顆熱烈的決心，誰也主張反對覆試，要求無條件地全體入校。於是反對覆試委員會，在五分鐘之內就組織成立了。當天下午全體整隊過江至漢口軍事委員會的唐秘書生營那裏請願，隊伍站在外面，請願意見書由十個代表遞呈，當時得到的答覆是圓滿的，有希望的。他說立刻打電報去南京請示。同時允許幫助我們，使我們都有參加學習革命的機會。誰知三天過去了，還沒有半點消息。

第四天的上午，突然有個男同學氣喘喘地跑來高陞棧——我們女同學住的地方——說：「不好了，不好了，湖南來的同學都去覆試去了，不覆試的，一個也不能進去；還有，十個代表已經掛牌全體開除了！」

「怎麼？開除代表！那麼……我……我……」

真像半夜裏聽到一聲巨雷，我驚訝得說不出話了，雖然明明知道這次被選為代表，是為大衆的利益，並不是胡鬧，犧牲個人，我決不後悔，只是心裏總有一點莫明其妙的難過。

第二天，報上登着開除代表和湘生覆試的新聞了。當我看到謝鳴岡三個字時，我更加感到淒涼！我想這次如果當兵不成，真找不到第二條出路了！學校縱然不開除我，

have nowhere to turn. There is only advance in revolution, no retreat. We will not go back! We will all join the military academy!"

Her powerful sentences struck every heart like hammers. Everyone decided to demand unconditional admittance. A committee for resisting the second examinations was formed in five minutes. The same afternoon the whole group went across the river to Hankow to present our request to Secretary Tang Shengchih, a general in the military office. Ten of us took the letter of petition in to the general while all the rest stood outside. The reply was hopeful. He immediately telegraphed to Nanking to ask for advice, and at the same time promised to help us all have the chance to serve in the revolution. But for three days no news came.

On the morning of the fourth day, a boy student came all out of breath to the Kaosheng Hotel, where the girl students stayed, and panting said, "Bad news, bad news! The students from Hunan all have to take the second examinations. Those who don't, can't, get in—not one of them. Besides, the ten delegates who presented the request have already been dismissed!"

"What? Dismiss the delegates? Then I.. I..!"

For me it was like hearing thunder at night. Although I knew that the delegates acted for the common good, and that the sacrifice of individuals should not matter still in my heart I was very sad.

The next day, the names of the dismissed delegates were printed in the newspaper. When I read the three words of my name, Hsieh Mungkang, I was overcome by despair! If I couldn't join the army there was no place

母親也一定要逼着我出嫁的，不但求學的前途從此斷絕，生命也會被封建社會的惡魔吞噬去了，從事革命的志願，更永遠不能實現。完了，完了，滿腔的希望，如今變成了絕望，浩渺的洞庭湖，也許將成爲我的葬身之地吧？

『有辦法了，妹妹！』哥哥跑來了，快活地喊着。『從北方招來的一大批學生還沒有考試，你趕快改名，換北方籍去報名投考吧！』

這是一個難得的機會，同時也是危險的嘗試。如果被學校查出來，那不是『弄巧成拙』嗎？然而爲了前途，爲了實現自己當兵的志願，也顧不了許多了。

報名單取來了，一個人悄悄地去報名，在姓名一項裏，我寫下了謝冰瑩三個字，其次是籍貫，我填的是北京。

『學校證明書，怎麼沒有拿來？』那位穿軍裝的辦事員，認真地問我。

『沒有，大概過二天就有了，我們來考的人很多，修業證書在一位隊長手裏，他後天才能到。』

滿以爲難關可以平安地過去了，誰知另一位站在我前面，看着我填表的辦事員說：『你是北京人嗎？爲什麼說的一口湖南話？』

『是的，我是北京人，因爲從小跟着父親在湖南長大，所以說那裏的話。』

for me to go! Even if the old school did not dismiss me, Mother would certainly force me to marry. That would not only cut short my studies, but my life would be swallowed up by the ghosts of feudalistic society. Never would I be able to fulfill my wish of joining the revolution! All was over! Perhaps the great Tung-ting Lake would receive my body.

My brother came, crying happily, "I have thought of a way, Sister! A great many students from the northern provinces have not taken the first examinations yet. Change your name and go to enroll as a student from the North!"

It was a rare chance but a risky one. If the school should find it out, it would only make matters worse. But for the sake of my future, and for the fulfillment of my wish to join the army, I was willing to take the risk.

I got the application form and wrote down "Hsieh Pingying" as my name. For my place of nativity I wrote "Peking."

"Where is your school certificate?" the uniformed officer asked me.

"I haven't it with me," I said. "It will be here in a few days. There are so many of us from the North, and the certificates are in the keeping of a group leader. He will be here the day after tomorrow."

I thought I had safely passed the worst difficulty, but another officer who was standing near saw me writing my name on the card and asked me, "Are you Pekinese? Why do you talk like one from Hunan?"

"Yes, I am Pekinese. I grew up in Hunan with my father. That is why I have this dialect."

『你該不是被開除了的那個代表謝鳴岡吧？』他像偵探似的，眼睜睜地望着我。

『什麼？你說什麼？我聽不懂。』

我力持鎮靜，但我的那顆心仍突突地很快地跳着。

好在這時候恰好來了許多個報名的，他們沒有再往下問了，否則是多麼的危險呵！

『恭喜，恭喜，你考取了第一名！』

當王君把這消息很高興地告訴我時，我總不能相信，我以為他是故意和我開玩笑，第一名也許是倒數過來第一，否則一定被學校知道而又被開除了。懷着高興而又恐懼的心情，我飛也似的跑到了發榜的地方。抬頭一看，果然自己的名字在最前面的第一個，我發出勝利的微笑來了。

——丘八。幾天之後，我就要開始丘八的生活了！哈哈！歸途中我這樣微笑着自言自語。

晚上哥哥添了菜請我喝酒，還約了他的朋友來陪，被開除了的我，還有今天的快樂，真是夢想不到的事。

入伍

我記得很清楚，是一九二六年的十一月二十五日的下午，我們搬進了中央軍事政治學校的女生隊。

擠，擠，擠，大家擠在一堆，排成了高低不一的混亂隊伍，有少數同學望着那位女官長的那種神氣十足的表情

"You are not by any chance the Hsieh Minglang who was dismissed?" He stared at me like a detective.

"What are you saying?" I asked. "I don't understand you."

I tried to appear calm but my heart was beating fast.

Luckily at this moment many others came in to enroll, and he did not ask me further questions. A narrow escape!

"Congratulations! You came out first among those admitted!"

When a student named Wong happily told me this news, I could not believe it. I thought he was making fun of me. Perhaps I came out first counting backward! Perhaps the school had found me out and dismissed me. Trembling with excitement, I flew across to the college where the bulletin board was. When I lifted my head and saw my name first, I smiled in triumph.

"A chiupa! A soldier! After a few days, I shall begin a soldier's life!" I kept smiling and talking to myself all the way back.

That night my brother ordered some special dishes and some wine, and invited some of his friends to dinner. I had never dreamed that after being dismissed from school I was still to have this happy day!

First Day as a Cadet 第一日入學

I still remember vividly the afternoon when we moved into the girls' unit of the Central Military and Political Academy.

We pushed and jostled and stood in a line, tall and short all mixed up together. We were staring at the

！，不由得格格地笑了出來。

「快，快，快點把隊伍排齊，不許笑，要隱隱了。」男官長說話的態度異常莊嚴，大家都不約而同地打了幾個冷戰。

足足站了一個鐘頭，才把我們分成三個區隊，依着身材的高矮排成了，我是第三區隊的第三十三名，比我高大的同學很多，但還有十多個比我更小更矮的。

我拍拍一個叫做鄭梅光的肩膊：「你太小了，怎麼背得起槍呢？」

「哈哈你以為自己很大嗎？不是和我一樣是個小兵。」

「不許說話！」

我們最初受到警告了，大家都把視線移向左邊來，鄭，仍然在微笑着。我低下頭來，感到一種說不出的難受。

突然從裏面挑出五擔軍服，接着點名冊每人發了一身灰布棉衣，一頂帽子，一雙橡皮底鞋，一雙草鞋，二雙黑布襪子，一雙灰布裏腿布，還有一根一寸多寬的束腰帶。

東西分配好後，那位男官長（後來打聽才知道是連長）告訴我們怎樣打綁腿，怎樣束皮帶。怎樣戴帽子，怎樣敬禮。

接着他說：「你們趕快回寢室去把身上的小姐衣服脫下來，換上軍裝，從今起你們再也不是嬌滴滴的小姐，而是雄糾糾的武夫了。」

聽到這裏，大家哈哈的大笑起來，連長這次並沒有

woman officer with all her military airs, and some were giggling.

"Hurry up and get together and don't giggle. We are going to form a company," a man officer said, with a cold dignity which made everybody shiver.

After fully an hour, we had been divided into three companies arranged according to height. I was No. 33 in the third company. There were many who were taller than I, but about a dozen cadets were even shorter.

I patted the shoulder of Chang Meikuang and said, "You are too small; how can you hold a gun?"

"Ha, ha! You think you are big, don't you? Aren't you just a small private like myself?"

"Silence!"

We had thus our first warning, and our eyes were turned to the left. Chang was still smiling. I bent my head and felt uncomfortable.

Suddenly someone brought forth great stacks of uniforms, and, calling out everybody's name, gave each a gray cotton jacket and pants, a hat, rubber shoes, a pair of straw sandals, two pairs of black cloth stockings, gray cloth leggings, and a leather belt.

When everyone had her own things, the man officer who are later found out was a sergeant, taught us how to wind our leggings, how to put on our leather belts, how to wear our hats, and how to salute.

Then he said, "Go to your bedrooms quickly. Take off your girl dresses and put on your uniforms. From today on you are no more delicate and helpless girls, but strong and brave soldiers."

When we heard this, we burst out into laughter. The

罵，只是接着說下去：『最要緊的，你們要把臉上的胭脂水粉洗得乾乾淨淨，不要留一絲的痕跡在上面，頭髮一律剪短，最好是剃光像我們的一樣。』

『呀！』誰驚訝得叫出聲來了。

連長即刻正言厲色地改變了剛才的溫和態度。『你們首先要認清楚，到這裏不是像在文學堂似的過着浪漫的舒服的小姐生活，你們都是兵，今天開始入伍，軍人的天職是服從紀律，服從長官，整齊嚴肅，吃苦耐勞……』

我們每個人的精神都振作起來，我們將是個入伍兵了，過去的一切浪漫習慣都應該去掉得乾乾淨淨。

我們開始過一天上四點鐘學科，四點鐘衛科的生活了。步槍真重，一支恐怕有三十多斤，和樹墩一樣矮的有六個，她們都沒有槍高。出操時，前面的每個人都要望着她們發笑，有時跑步，她們簡直拖不起槍來；但這只是最初幾天的現象，一星期過後，她們都變成短小精幹的前衛隊了。

奇怪，過慣了浪漫的，自由的學生生活的我們，突然來這裏過這種機械的，艱苦的，唯命是從的軍隊生活，誰也不感覺到苦，或者有什麼不舒服，更沒有人想開小差。只是在入伍期間，（要經過三個月的入伍，才算是正式兵，）每月只限定請假出外一次的規則，倒使大家覺得太嚴格了一點。

冬天，雪花飄滿了大地，在人們正在做着甜夢的時候，我們却在潔白的雪上踏上了整齊的足印，張開嘴在大聲喊着：『一——二——三——四』了。

sergeant did not scold us this time but went on, "The most important thing is to wash the powder and rouge from your faces. Don't leave a trace of them. Cut your hair short—or still better shave your head bald like us."

"Oh!" everybody cried.

The sergeant's face changed and looked very severe. "You must understand, this is not like a school of arts, where girls pass their easy, romantic lives. You are soldiers now and you must obey your officers, dress neatly and plainly, and endure hardships. . ."

Our spirits brightened. We were to be soldiers, and say good-bye to the comfortable ways of the old life.

We began to have every day four hours of science and four hours of technical training. The rifle was very heavy weighing over thirty catties. Six of the cadets were as small as Shuyung and shorter than the guns they carried, so that at drill everybody laughed at them. They could hardly hold up their guns when running for the first few days. But after a week they all became very alert and agile.

Strange to say, we who had been used to freedom, and had suddenly submitted to the rigorous life of the soldier, did not feel the worse for it or have any discomfort, and nobody thought of disobeying orders. Everyone must pass three months of probation before she became a regular soldier. During the probationary period we could go out only once a month; and this only, we thought, was a little too severe.

Through that winter, when the ground was covered with snow and other people were in their sweet dreams, we were making footprints on the snow, and opening our mouths wide to shout, "One, two, one, two," as we marched along.

紀律

容貞，這位喜歡擦點粉，衣服穿得很整齊的女兵，她爲了沒有經過請假的手續，偷着跑出去看她的愛人，回來便被送進禁閉室，飯也不給她吃，而且第一天連一滴水都不給她喝。門口站着守崗的，雖然也是同學。但誰也不敢送東西給她吃；我們從洗臉房出來，如果跑去探望她一下，給值星官看到了，他馬上便板起臉孔說：「你們也要想進去吧，一塊兒關起來！」

她一連禁閉了三天，還沒有釋放的消息，誰都替她着急，覺得楊連長這次的處罰，未免太苛刻了一點，對於女兵，尤其是初次犯規的，應該特別原諒，我和樹馨二個人更加難過，每次偷偷地替她送饅頭去時，總看見她的眼裏含着盈盈欲滴的淚珠，仰躺在一塊硬板子上，僅僅只有一條灰色毯子，便桶也放在裏面。每天只送二碗白飯，一碗鹽水給她吃。我跑去問連長爲什麼不給她菜吃，他回答我：「犯了紀律的人，才送進禁閉室，她現在是個犯人了，應該受這種苦的待遇，如果住的吃的都和你們一樣，那麼，誰也願意犯法了。」

「她什麼時候可以恢復自由？」

「只要她自己認錯，明天就可以放出來。」

本來的規定祇禁閉三天的，誰知容貞的個性太強，不肯認錯，所以又加了兩天，後來爲了馬桶問題，改良吃飯和鋪位等問題又和連長鬧過一次，連長說她是有意搗亂，

Discipline

Yungtsong was a girl who loved powder and rouge, and her uniform was always very neat. Once she went to see her lover without asking for leave, and was locked in a dark cell, where on the first day, she could not have even a drop of water. Although the guard outside the door was a cadet too, no one dared to give her food. If we peeped in at her, the officer in charge would say with a severe countenance, "Do you want to go in, too? We will lock you up together!"

Everybody worried about her and thought that Sergeant Yang was being too severe, especially since it was the first time she had ever disobeyed orders. Shuyung and I secretly gave her bread, and saw tears in her eyes, which made us very uneasy. She lay on a hard board with only a gray blanket, and a commode in the room. They gave her some water and two bowls of rice without anything to go with it. I went to ask the Sergeant why they did not give her something else; and he answered, "Those who go into the dark cell have disobeyed the orders. She is now a prisoner and must be treated as such. If we gave her the same kind of food as you have, then anyone would be glad to disobey orders."

"When can she be set free again?"

"If she will admit her mistake, she will be let out tomorrow."

Originally she was to be shut up for three days, but she was stubborn and wouldn't admit her mistake, and so she was shut in for another two days. Then because she complained about the commode and raised the question of improving her bedding and food, and quarreled several times with the Ser-

所以又加了兩天。這樣一來，容真禁閉一星期的消息傳遍全校了，大家都提心吊膽，生怕自己也有那麼一天來到。她放得放出來以後，臉色似乎蒼老了許多，精神也沒有以前的活潑了。大家包圍着問她：『黑房子生活的滋味怎樣？』或是『你這次是爲愛而犧牲的吧？』

初入伍的時候，我們在『軍令如山，黨紀似鐵』的紀律之下，到了請假遲歸，或者吃飯站隊時笑了一聲而被罰立正的，幾乎每天至少有兩個人。我雖然沒有住過禁閉室，但罰站却在三次以上。

說來慚愧，自己早就應該受處罰的；雖然我入的是這馬軍紀森嚴的軍事學校，我們的待遇完全和士兵一樣的，但天生成的我那種愛好藝術，愛好自由，完全和孩子一般的性情，無論如何也改不掉。自從連長有次在我的講桌裏發現有小鴨，小貓，洋娃娃，小瓷小雞以後，他就常常罵着：『學文學的人是浪漫的，不能革命的！』

受了這一個刺激以後，不但小玩意任他沒收，而且連我從長沙帶來的幾本小說，我都丟在儲藏室的角落裏不看了。每天和眼睛接觸的盡是些農民革命問題，世界革命史，經濟學，政治學，軍事學……等，尤其是那本步兵操典，幾乎有大半可以背得出來！

geant, he said that she was too fussy and gave her two more days. As a result, she was confined altogether for one week. The whole school knew about it and everyone was afraid that the same might happen to herself. When Yungtseng was let out of the dark cell, her face was deadly pale and she was no more the lively girl she had been before. Everyone stood around her and asked, "What is it like in the dark cell?" or said, "This time you have sacrificed yourself for love."

When we first enlisted, we were taught to regard "military orders as like a mountain, and party discipline as like iron." One or two of us were punished every day by being made to stand at attention, either for returning late from a day on leave, or for laughing at meals or during drill. I was made to stand at attention for punishment several times, but I was never sent to the dark cell.

I really should have been punished more. Although there was strict military discipline in the Academy and we were treated as soldiers, I still liked small, beautiful things, I still liked my liberty with a child's delight which could not be changed. From the day when the sergeant discovered little ducks, kittens, dolls, little drums and gongs on my table, he often scolded me, "Those who study literature are too free in their ways; they can't be revolutionists!"

After that I threw away the little toys, and put away in a storeroom the few novels I had brought from Changsha. Every day the books that met my eyes were those dealing with agrarian revolution, history of the world war, economics, political science and military science, especially the Drill Manual, of which I could recite almost more than half!

也許是江山好改，本性難移的原故吧？如何克制自己的情感，下決心要把自己鍛鍊成一個鐵一般的性格，但那種孩子氣，永遠也去不了。

還記得有次在野外演習，休息的號音一吹，我趕快丟下槍爬上一條水牛的背上玩去了。王排長氣憤憤地走來責備我的時候，我却以笑容回答他：

「排長，學校裏沒有馬給我們練習，只好騎騎牛。」

出發

我們得到一個命令，女生隊要挑選二十個出來組織宣傳隊隨軍北伐，第一個目的地是河南。

「報告連長，我要去北伐！」

「報告連長，我是北方人，正好去宣傳北方的民衆！」

「報告連長，我的身體強健，一定打勝仗的，我要參加北伐！」

楊連長的房裏簡直像被擊穿了的蜂窩，來來去去的，盡是我們的同學。

「大家不要鬧，誰都要參加北伐的，不過是遲早的問題，這次只挑選二十個身體健康，跑路很快，而能做文字宣傳，或口頭宣傳的去，其餘的以後再分發批出發。」

每個人都希望自己有當選的希望。我高興極了，我想：我的身體很健康，又能跑快路，又能寫幾句文章，我應該有當選的可能吧！

果然，第二天的清晨，楊連長在報告我們出發河南的

Perhaps it is true that you can change mountains and rivers but not a person's nature. Although I tried to repress and restrain my feelings and to develop a firm, strong character, I could never change my childish self.

I still remember that once when we were drilling outside the city and when the bugle for dismissal sounded, I immediately threw down my gun and went to ride on a water buffalo. Corporal Wang angrily came up to scold me, but I smiled and answered him, "Corporal, the Academy does not provide horses for our training, so I have to practice on a buffalo."

To the Front

We got orders that twenty girl cadets were to be selected to form a propaganda corps to go with the army to the north. The immediate destination was Honan.

"I want to report, sergeant, I want to go to the North!"

"I want to report, sergeant, I am a Northerner and I am good for propaganda work among Northerners."

"I want to report, sergeant, I can fight well, my body is very strong; I want to join the Northern Expedition."

Sergeant Yang's room was like a raided beehive filled with bees going out and in.

"Don't make so much noise," he said calmly. "Everyone is going north sooner or later. This time we must choose twenty girls who are strong, who can run fast and can write propaganda stuff or talk to the people. The rest will be sent out in different parties later."

Everyone hoped she would be chosen. I thought happily, that my body was strong, I could run fast, and I could write articles, and I ought to be chosen!

Indeed, the next morning when Sergeant Yang reported

名單了，第二個就是我的名字，上帝！我該沒有聽錯吧？女生隊該沒有第二個謝冰瑩吧？我喜得發狂了！

等着！等着！出發的日子還是遙遙無期，我們二十個人正在焦急得要哭的時候，突然又接到一個緊急命令，說敵軍已到了汀泗橋，要我們立刻動員應戰，否則，他們馬上就會打到武昌來了。於是當夜大隊長招集全團男女同學開話，把我們組織成一個中央獨立師。第二天清早出發，女同學除了留三十多個在後方做宣傳和救護的工作外，其餘的全體出發。第二天，早晨五點鐘的時候，我們已經整裝待發了。

戰爭

比我們先一天出發的男生隊，已經在汀泗橋和敵人開過火了。當火車停住時，我伸出頭來一望，猛然地看到幾個受了傷的同志，痛得在血泊裏打滾：「媽，媽呀，痛死我了！」

還有兩個是死了的，鮮血染紅了整個頭部，腦漿也迸出來了！另一個是斷了一隻手臂的，眼睛還在半開着。我們請求排長允許我們下車，去救那三個受傷的同志，同時把那兩個死了的埋了他。

「不行，火車就要開了，前面的工作比這還緊要，這裏等一下有救護隊來抬的。」排長嚴肅的說，我的心裏，充滿了悲壯而淒涼的情緒，我開始領略到戰爭的殘酷了！

the names of those who were to go to Honan, my name was second. I hoped I was not mistaken. Certainly there was no other Hsieh Pingying in the girls' corps. I was mad with joy.

We waited but there was no date set for our departure. We were almost crying with impatience when we received word that the enemy had already reached Ting-szechiao, and that we had to leave immediately to meet them or they would soon be attacking Wuchang. That night the captain assembled the entire school, both girls and boys, and after giving us a talk formed us into a Central Independent Division. The next day we left at dawn. Except for about thirty ^{girls} cadets who stayed behind to do propaganda and ambulance work, the whole school left for the front. At five o'clock in the morning we were all in uniform and ready to start.

War

The boy cadets who had gone ahead one day before were already in contact with the enemy. When the train stopped, I put out my head and saw some wounded soldiers wallowing in their own blood and crying, "Oh, my Mother! It hurts so!"

There were two corpses, their heads smashed and the brains exposed. Another had lost his arm, but the eyes were still half-open. We pleaded with the corporal to let us get down and help the wounded comrades and bury the dead ones.

"No, the train will leave soon. There is more important work ahead. Some ambulance corps must be coming soon to help them." The corporal's voice was severe and rigid and my heart was greatly moved. I began to feel

一連三天，都沒有好好地吃過飯，每天從早晨六點吃了飯，一直要到晚上八點或九點後才有吃。在行軍時間，才知道士兵的生活，真是人類中最苦，最可憐的！有時，粗糙的米，還伴着許多谷殼，每餐像嚼沙子一般不能嚥下；菜呢？更不要說了，爲了便於攜帶，老是煮了一鍋發了霉的臭豆豉，撒了許多鹽在裏面，簡直鹹得不能進口。但是奇怪，當我饑餓了的時候，這些粗硬的飯和臭豆豉，竟比雞，魚，肉還要好吃，爬進口裏，像龍珠米似的，一溜就溜到喉管裏去了。

六月是最熱的季節，汗珠像雨點一般流下，衣服像剛浸水來似的，全身都被一塊濕布裹着，走起路來，怪難受的。一雙腳像踏在火爐上一般發燙，臉上的皮，開始一層一層地脫下來。「熱呵！熱呵！」的呼聲，到處都可聽到。但誰也沒有怨聲。誰也不想向後轉，或者開小差，誰也甘願忍受目前一切的困苦艱難，而把快樂寄託在「打勝仗」的上面。

有時污池裏的水，不但供我們洗臉，洗衣，而且也供給我們做飲料；男同學還把牠當做游泳池在裏面洗澡呢。

夜間行軍

晚上八點鐘，突然接到師部的命令，第三連要開拔到距離峯口四十餘里青山坳去駐防。據密報，還有小部分殘逆躲在山坳裏，我軍今晚前進，說不定在半途就要開起火來。

the cruelty of war.

Only when on the march did I realize fully the hard life of the soldier. For three days we did not have a regular meal; we ate at six o'clock in the morning, and could not get any more food until eight or nine in the evening. Sometimes the rice was mixed with husks and tasted like sand, and we found it hard to swallow. For vegetables, we cooked a pot of moldy pickled soya beans, with a lot of salt. It was so salty that we could hardly eat it. But when I was hungry the hard rice and pickled soya beans tasted better than chicken, fish, or meat, and went down the throat very gratefully.

June was the hottest month. Perspiration came down like raindrops, and when our clothing was thoroughly soaked, we felt as if our bodies were wrapped in wet cloth. Marching like that gave one the most uncomfortable feeling. Our feet were tramping upon what seemed like fire, and skin began to peel off our faces piece by piece. "Oh, it's hot, it's hot," was all we heard, but nobody regretted, nobody thought of retreating or running away. Everyone was glad to endure the hardships and wait to find happiness in winning victory.

Sometimes a dirty pond, besides giving us water to wash our faces and our clothes, also provided us drinking water. The boy cadets swam and bathed in it.

Marching at Night

It was eight in the evening when headquarters suddenly gave orders that the third platoon was going to Tsingshanyas, forty li away, to establish an outpost. We had received a secret report that some remnants of the enemy were hiding in the valley. We were to go that

「夜間行軍，自從出發以來，今天還是第一次，退出了學校生活的你們，也許有些胆小或者吃不下這種苦的，但你們現在是士兵，是戰士了，生命都可以犧牲，自然不怕吃苦。我現在要告訴你們的是夜間行軍，爲的避免敵方注意，同時因奉緊急命令，所以要在今晚十二點之前達到目的地，這條山路聽說非常不好走的，又不能打手電，你們要好好走，不要心慌，不要害怕，即使摔了一交也不要做聲，輕輕地爬起來就完事。各人的手要按着槍柄，免得和水壺飯盒相撞，發出叮噠噹啷的響聲來。記着，要大家絕對遵守鎮靜的紀律，不許開口說話，不許走得太重，脚步要輕輕地像老鼠似的……」

大家「吡」的一聲笑了出來。

「例，還沒有開步走就笑起來，這成什麼話！等下如果有人在路上笑的，他就有意擾亂。給敵人知道自己的隊伍，簡直等於通敵，那就非嚴格處分不可！」大家的笑容還掛在嘴邊沒有消失，但誰也不敢笑出聲來。

「楊連長究竟是個丘八出身，如果說脚步要輕輕地像燕子似的，那句子多麼富有詩意。」解散後，我聽在光慧的耳邊這樣說着。

我們的隊伍像長蛇似的開始走動了，起初還可以聽到

night and might run into the enemy midway.

"This is the first time in our expedition that we have undertaken a march at night," Sergeant Yang told us. "Some of you who are accustomed to school life may be a little afraid, or cannot endure this kind of hardship. But now you are soldiers at the front and are ready even to sacrifice your lives, so you should not be afraid. We are marching at night because we want to avoid being seen by the enemy. Besides, we have urgent orders to reach our destination at twelve tonight. I hear that the mountain roads are not easy to walk on and you must not use flashlights. You must walk carefully. Don't be nervous. If you fall, don't utter a sound, but lightly get up again. Hold your gun so that it will not knock against the water pots and food boxes. Remember, we must all keep absolutely quiet. Nobody is allowed to open her mouth and don't walk with too heavy steps. Walk lightly, like a mouse..."

Everyone let forth a little laugh.

"Now, you are laughing already when the march has not even begun. This won't do! If anyone laughs, on the way, she will be disobeying orders, and letting the enemy know our forces, which is the same as being a traitor. And for that punishment will not be light". Although everyone's smile was still playing about her mouth, nobody dared to laugh out loud.

"Sergeant Yang was born a soldier," I said in a whisper to Kuanglai after the assembly. "If he had said, 'Walk lightly like a pigeon,' how poetic it would be!"

We went off in a long line like a snake. At first we could still hear the knocking together of water pots and

水盞和飯盒相碰的聲音，後來經過排長輕輕地 啣過幾次，真的半點聲音也沒有了。有些穿了新草鞋的，從腳底下發出尖銳的聲音來，劉排長又站住了。「誰走得這麼響？」

「報告排長！沒有辦法，我穿的是雙新草鞋，今天早晨才買來的，這有節奏的聲音，是由那裏發出來的。」這劉是傳萬的聲音，他簡直在寫文章。

「不要囉哩囉蘇，再要響，把牠脫光打了赤腳走！」老劉害怕打赤腳，因為刺會跑到肉裏去的，他真的駭得祇敢輕輕地像老鼠似的走了。

夜，黑暗得伸手看不到指頭，對面看不清人。天上地下黑漆的一團，更分不出東西。每個人都像如履薄冰似的，小心翼翼地走着，忽然「撲通」一聲；前面有誰掉在水裏了，隊長立刻停止。

「走！走！前面快走！」劉排長說。

「一身都是泥漿了，眼睛打不開。」跌下水去的人說。有人掉下水的消息，全連的人就知道了，大家互相警戒着：「小心走呵。不要跌倒。」

我們有時上山坡，聽見底下流着聲音洪大得像瀑布一般的溪水，雖然看不見那不知若干深的巨壑，但由水聲裏可以聽得出，這裏確實是個危險的地方。

「後面小心，這裏有一個深潭，大家慢慢走，掉下去不是好玩的。」這聲音，是由走在最前面的那個發出來的。

rice and meal boxes, but after several cautions by the corporal there was not a sound. Then there came the squeak of straw sandals. Corporal Liu stood still and said, "Who is making that noise?"

"Reporting to the Corporal! I can't help it, I bought the sandals only this morning, and from them comes the squeaking." It was Liu Chuanwan's voice, talking as if she were writing a literary composition.

"Don't chatter. If they make any noise again, take them off and walk in your bare feet!"

Liu was afraid to take off her sandals, because her feet would be hurt, so she walked lightly like a mouse.

The night was so dark that one could not see one's own fingers or the face of the next person. The universe was just one mass of black with no distinguishable objects. Everyone was treading as if on thin ice. Suddenly we heard a splash; someone in front had fallen down in water. The captain immediately stopped.

"March! Walk quickly—those in front!" said Corporal Liu.

"I am all covered with mud, I cannot open my eyes," said the one who had fallen.

The news spread through the platoon, and we cautioned each other, "Be careful, don't fall."

Sometimes when we were climbing a slope, we heard below us a rushing mountain stream. We had no idea how deep the ravine was, but from the sound of the water below we knew it was quite dangerous.

A voice came from ahead: "Be careful, there is a deep swamp here. Walk slowly, everybody; it will be no fooling to fall into it."

「報告連長！打一下手電吧，前面太危險了！」誰在大膽地說着。

「不能打手電，這是很險要的地方，說不定有殘敵埋伏在那裏，慢一點走好了，千萬要靜。」

這時緊張的空氣，包圍了每一個人的身心。也許是初次經驗夜間行軍生活的原故吧，大家有一種好奇心，希望真的有敵人從深山裏鑽出來，我們倒好迎頭痛擊。而且在黑茫茫的夜裏，什麼都看不見，只聽到「拍嘭！拍嘭！」的槍聲，紅光燦燦的炸彈，那該是多麼美麗的夜景，多麼雄壯的音樂！

深潭過去了，現在走過一處左右都是高山的地方，山像屏風似的夾住一條小路。

「拍！拍！拍！」

「停住！」連長發命令了，「聽一聽，是不是槍聲？如果前面有敵人，後面三排埋伏，前面尖兵隊預備開槍，不要慌張，沒有得到命令，不許亂開槍！」

每個人的心裏都充滿着緊張，興奮的情緒。連長又繼續着說：「不要害怕，他們是殘敵，不堪一擊的；作戰時大家要沉着，勇敢，不怕犧牲！」

空氣又恢復平靜了。假使敵人確在前面，我一定給他打擊。隊伍走得很慢，我有點不耐煩起來，連忙從一個一個的身邊擠了過去。

「幹嗎這樣向前擠？不許擾亂秩序！」班長在罵我了。

"Reporting to the sergeant! Please turn on the flashlight just once," someone said bravely.

"No, This is a dangerous section. We aren't at all sure there aren't some of the enemy hiding before us. Walk slowly, and keep quiet."

The sense of tension was felt by everybody. Perhaps it was because we were complete novices at night marching. We all had a feeling of curiosity, a hope that there really were some of the enemy, so that we could see a good fight. In the dark night, no one could see anything but the red light of the bombs, and we would hear only the gun shots. How beautiful, how heroic the night would be!

After we passed the swamp, two high mountains rose like a screen, enclosing the little road between.

We heard three gunshots.

"Stand still!" the sergeant ordered. "Listen, until we know if it is rifle fire. If there are any of the enemy in front, the three rear squads lie in ambush, while the front gets ready to fire. Don't be excited. Don't fire without orders!"

Everyone was tense and alert. The sergeant continued, "Don't be afraid; they are only remnants of the enemy. They cannot stand a fight. In battle we must be calm and not afraid to sacrifice ourselves."

The air was quiet again. If the enemy were really ahead I wished to fight them. The line was moving very slowly and I got impatient and rushed past the others in front.

"What are you doing? Keep the order!" The corps leader scolded me.

「我要到最前綫打衝鋒去！」我回答他。

「噢通！」突然我的右腳踏進了水裏，幸而左腳站得穩。身子沒有倒下去。

我覺得有點害羞。

「還說衝鋒，走路都要跌倒，唉——」另一個男同學故意輕輕地譏諷我，引得大家都笑起來了。

走着，大家寂靜地走着，在每個人的懷裏，滾着一顆追求光明，追求革命的赤心，跳躍着！燃燒着！雖然一連走了三四個鐘頭沒有休息，但誰也不敢說疲倦，誰也精神抖擻地在追趕前面的隊伍。

突然，在那遙遠的山邊，發現幾點紅光，在黑暗中照耀着，我們的目的地快到了！

「走上前去呵！曙光在前，同志們奮鬥！」

我首先放開嗓子唱着，大家都一齊唱了起來，雄壯的歌聲，衝破了黑夜的沉寂。

解散的前夜

一個月零四天的戰事，如今告了一個段落，我們是高奏凱歌回來了！雖然這次西征，犧牲了七十餘個同學，百多個教導隊同志，然而我們獲得了好幾千枝槍，建立了革命的基礎，在每個民衆的心裏，樹下了永遠不可動搖的信念。我們最大的勝利，就是從軍閥手裏得到整千整萬聽話我們，信仰我們的羣衆！革命的種子，散佈在我們到過的任何地方。勝利，我們是得着最後的勝利歸來了！

"I want to go in front and fight!" I answered.

With a splash my right foot went into water. Fortunately my left leg was on firm ground, so that I did not quite fall.

I got up ashamed,

"You are talking of rushing forward to battle when you don't know even how to walk! Ai . . . !" a boy cadet softly teased me.

Thus, as we walked quietly, everyone's heart was leaping with hope, burning with revolutionary ardor, beating with excitement. Though we walked for three or four hours at a stretch, no one complained of fatigue and everyone was in high spirits.

Suddenly from a distant hillside there appeared red lights shining in the darkness. We were near our destination!

"The dawn is ahead, comrades. March on!"

I raised my voice and sang, and everybody joined in, and the sound of martial song broke the silence of the night.

The Last Night with the Army

After a month and four days the adventure was ended and we came back in triumph. Though this western excursion claimed over seventy of our cadets and over one hundred of our officers' training corps, we had captured a few thousand rifles, and we had laid the foundation of the revolution in the hearts of the people and had awakened in them a faith that could not be shaken. We had won the confidence of tens of thousands of people who formerly lived under the warlords. The seeds of revolution were scattered wherever we went. We came back with a

是從前綫歸來的第七天晚上，我坐在呂靜（她是女生隊的看護長）那裏談天，告訴她關於行軍時候的生活是如何快樂有趣的時侯，忽然聽到號兵在吹集合號了。

在三分鐘內，全體已經整好了隊。

大家眼巴巴地望着站在階台上的五位男女官長，他們都把頭低下來。他們在想些什麼？

楊連長開始說話了。「各位同學！」

爲什麼他今夜的聲音突然改變了呢？似乎他的聲音在顫慄，我害怕有什麼不幸的事發生。

「首先大家要鎮靜，不要慌張，要勇敢，不要害怕。」

我心裏想：難道又要我們出發嗎？那有什麼可怕呢？

「我將告訴你們一個很不幸的消息，請大家聽了不要傷心！革命者受挫折，受阻礙，這是常有的事，我們應該再接再厲，絕不可灰心的！」

他究竟要說些什麼？

「因爲反動勢力太大，爲了要保存革命的實力，環境逼着我們，不能不暫時解散……」

這是晴天一聲霹靂，午夜的一顆炸彈，牠炸破了二百五十顆熱烈的心！大家都像失掉了知覺似的再也無心聽下去了，然而楊連長的聲音更悲壯地繼續響着：

victory!

The seventh night after we came back from the front, I was sitting with Lu Tsing, who was the matron of the girls' corps. I was telling her about the fun and happiness we had during the expedition, when suddenly the bugle sounded for assembly.

Within three minutes, we were all standing in line.

Everyone's eyes were on the five men and women officers on the platform, whose heads were all bent. What were they thinking?

Sergeant Yang began to speak:

"Fellow cadets!"

Why had his voice changed tonight? It seemed to be shaking. I afraid that something unfortunate had happened.

"First, I want to beg you to be quiet. Don't be excited. Be brave and don't be afraid!"

I thought: Is he going to tell us of another expedition? What is there to be afraid of?

"I am going to tell you some unlucky news. Please don't feel too badly about it. It often happens that the Revolution runs against obstacles and is temporarily stopped. We must not be disheartened, but must gird ourselves for the future struggle."

What was he saying?

"The reactionary forces are still too powerful. Because it is well that we try to conserve our revolutionary forces, we are compelled by present circumstances to break up. . ."

It was like a thunderbolt out of a clear sky, a bomb-shell exploding at midnight, which pierced the hearts of two hundred and fifty people. We listened as if in a dream, careless of what was to come. Sergeant Yang's

「當然，這絕不是害怕，絕不是不抵抗，我們無論如何要做最後的掙扎！你們如果身體好的，可以加入十一軍，其餘各人回到自己的家裏去，暫時忍受一些，不久的將來，我們也許要過比現在更痛快，更自由的生活了！現在每人發十元錢，明天趕快拿去做衣服化裝，灰衣是不能穿的。」

這是怎麼一回事呢？爲什麼要解散我們？我們的希望，我們的理想，難道真的只能曇花一現就消滅了嗎？

楊連長報告完了之後，接着是每個官長的沉痛的演說，她們的每句話，都是那樣深刻地烙印在我們的腦海裏。

「只要你們的信仰始終不變，只要你們時時刻刻都想到爲革命而犧牲，那樣，在目前如果生活沒有辦法時，就是去當軍閥的姨太太也未嘗不可以，只是你們千萬不要沉醉在物質的享樂中，而忘了自己的使命。你們總要有一天結果那萬惡的軍閥，才不愧是一位受過革命洗禮，受過軍訓政訓來的戰士，方不愧是一個有志氣，有思想的勇敢底女性！」

這些話，像一把亮晃晃的尖刀，刺進了每個人的心裏，有很多在流淚了。

整個的晚上，我們都沒有睡，就這樣大家圍坐在操場裏呼口號，唱歌，演說，一直鬧到天明。

voice was sad and serious, as he went on.

"Of course this does not mean that we are giving up. We must continue the struggle. Those of you who are strong could join the Eleventh Army. The others can return home and bear it patiently for the present. Perhaps in the not distant future, we may enjoy a happier and freer life. Now we will give you ten dollars each, with which you will buy ordinary dresses and disguise yourselves tomorrow. You must not be seen again in your gray uniforms."

How was this possible? Why did we have to be broken up and dispersed? Were all our hopes, our ideals going to disappear in a flash like a mirage?

After Sergeant Yang concluded, each of the other officers made a deeply moving speech, in words which were deeply carved in our memories.

"Only if you do not change your beliefs, only if you remember always the ideal of sacrifice for the revolution, then it does not matter even if you should become the concubine of a warlord. But don't forget your mission and lose yourselves in material comforts. One day surely you will end the lives of the evil warlords. Only thus can you be worthy of being one baptized by the revolution, one who has received this political and military training. Only thus will you be worthy of the name of patriotic, enlightened, and resolute girl soldiers!"

These words were like a sharp knife thrust into every heart. Some of us were shedding tears.

We did not sleep the whole night, but sat on the drill-ground and shouted slogans and sang and made speeches until dawn.

女生隊雖然解散了，但她的精神，是永遠存在着的！
革命的種子，散佈在中國的第一個城市，每一個農村，我
永遠地堅信着：最後的勝利，終久是歸我們的！



Although the girl cadets were to be scattered, their spirit would live forever. The revolutionary seeds had been sown in every city and every village of China. I had firm faith that the final victory would be ours!

家庭監獄

爲了便於自己裁製起見，我和樹蓉，翔雲珊珊都買了同樣的白副綢，各人做了一件沒有領子的長西裝。所謂西裝，並不是像西洋女人穿的那麼漂亮的時裝。不過沒有扣子，領子是桃形，穿起來時，只消往頭上一罩就行了。

我們的頭髮都是剪得很短的，尤其樹蓉的完全剃得像個芋頭一般，只這一點，無論我們化裝技術怎樣高明，人家一看就會知道是拿過槍桿來的女兵。還有，我們曬黑了的皮膚，和粗厚手掌，也是容易給人認出的。

「軍服脫下了，什麼時候再穿？」當我說這句話時，竟滴下了兩顆熱淚，樹蓉也忍不住哭起來了。

上火車了，僅僅只有鴻淒然地走來送我們。一個月前我們從這裏出發鄂西時。是多麼威風凜凜，轟轟烈烈，今天第二次離開武昌的今天。卻是天色沉沉狂風怒號，淒涼，脫不出的淒涼憤慨，填滿了我們的心胸，要不是那堅強的信仰，和未來新社會的紅光在主宰我們，誘惑我們，誰願意苟延殘命呢？鐵軌上，難道不是很好的葬身之地嗎？

被母親關起來了

SHUYUNG, HSIANGHSIAO, SANSAN, AND MYSELF

all bought the same kind of white silk, and each made a long Western dress without any high collar, because it was easier to cut. The so-called "Western dress" was not what the fashionable Western ladies wore, but a thing without any buttons, with a V-shaped collar to be slipped over the head.

Our hair was very short, particularly Shuyung's, which was shaved like a taro. This was the most difficult part to disguise, and no matter what we did people would know at once that we were girls who had carried guns. Moreover people would recognize us easily by our tanned complexion and our rough hands.

"When are we going to put this uniform on again?" When I said this, two hot tears rolled down my face, and Shuyung could not help sobbing.

Hung alone came to see us off at the train. A month ago, we were departing for Western Hupeh, so proud and excited. Today when we were leaving Wuchang for the second time, the sky was heavy and the wind was howling, and our hearts too were overcast with disillusionment and silent rage. Sadness was written on everyone's face. Had we not that strong faith, that hope of the coming of a new world to dominate and lure us on, who would think it worth while to continue this meaningless life? Was not the railroad track a good place to end our lives?

Interned by My Mother

兩個瘦小的轎夫抬着我，步步地走近了我一別兩年時故鄉時，我的心也跟着漸漸地沉重起來。

在望見了那所我第一次見到的新屋時，好像有一種微弱而沉痛的聲音在我的耳邊響着：「這就是禁閉你的牢獄呵！」

然而我並不害怕，我是下了奮鬥的決心才回家來的，牢獄雖然建築得這般堅固，但我相信我的力一定能衝破牠的。

到家了！姊姊和嫂嫂，母親，還有許多孩子們都出來迎接，她們的臉上都堆滿了笑容。緊緊地握着我的手，孩子們都扯着我的衣服問：「還認得我嗎？姑姑！」尤其最高興是白髮蕭蕭的老母親，她喜歡得連眼淚都流了出來。

『兒呀，你瘦了很多了，在外邊真苦呀！』

母親用衣袖擦眼淚時，姊姊和嫂嫂也陪着哭紅了眼睛，只有芸寶，在牽着我的手問着：「媽媽，你給我買了洋娃娃帶來沒有？」

進門，我就看到了堂屋裏擺了許多漆得紅紅綠綠，金光閃閃的各種各式的木器，我知道這就是替我預備的嫁奩；我真替母親嘆息，冤枉花了這許多錢！

午飯後，她們領我參觀新造的房子。這雖是舊式的建築，房間却很寬大，光綫也十分充足，空氣不用說，在這樣水秀山青的鄉間，是最新鮮的了。

『你看，娘是多麼爲你操心呵，爲了漆這些木器，我

Two thin little sedan-chair carriers carried me step by step nearer to the home which I had left two years ago. My heart was feeling heavier and heavier.

Looking at the new house for the first time, I heard a faint sorrowful voice whispering in my ear, "This is the prison you are going into!"

But I was not afraid; I had made up my mind to come back, and I believed I should be able to break out of this prison even though it was so strongly built.

Home again! My mother, sister, sisters-in-law, and many children came to receive me. Their faces were beaming; they held my hands tightly. The children pulled at my dress and said, "Remember me, Auntie?" My white-haired grandmother was so glad that tears stood in her eyes.

"You are much thinner, dear," she said. "You must have suffered much."

Mother was wiping her eyes with her sleeves, and Sister's eyes were moist. But little Yunpao pulled my hand and asked,

"Did you bring me a doll, Auntie?"

I went into the main hall, and there I saw all kinds of furniture painted red and green, shining, glittering. I knew these were part of my dowry, and I felt sorry for Mother for wasting so much money.

After lunch they took me through the new house. The rooms were big and high and sunny, though quite old-fashioned. There was plenty of light and the good country air of the village.

"See what your mother has done for you!" said Mother. "During the two months they were painting the

有二個多月沒有睡了，括風的天，生怕灰塵落在金紙上，常常睡到半夜爬起來用油紙蓋上，白天又怕孩子們去弄髒了，或者麻雀飛來撒尿在上面，天天都要去監工；否則也許兩年也漆不好，現在三十多件木器都漆好了，被窩，帳子也都辦好了，只等你回來縫衣服。」母親一口氣說到這裏，我半句話也沒有回答，只是低着頭走着，她還以為這是少女害羞的常態。

滿肚子要說的話，我竟不知從何說起，在父親還沒有回來之前，我想還是不提到解除婚約的好；母親是這樣頑固的女性，和她說，一定沒有好結果的，我忍耐着過了兩天的丐巴生活。誰也沒有料到鄉裏的消息靈通，竟比無綫電還來得快，蕭家已經知道我回來了，竹林（未婚夫蕭明的叔父）寫信來要求我家看日子接親，大哥拿信給我看。

「怎麼回答他呢？」他問。

「你說等父親回來再說好了。」

可是這個問題怎樣解決呢？結婚期當在不遠，我如果不趕快進行解除婚約的工作，那就來不及了，

事情真湊巧，剛剛這天晚上父親回來了，看了竹林的信，他立刻找我談話，並問我結婚究竟定在什麼時候好。

「這次我是專為此事回來的，爸爸，我前次寫回來的信，想必你老還記得很清楚，我和蕭明是絕對不能結合的！他與我不但沒有半點愛情，簡直連感情都沒有，他的思

furniture I hardly slept. On windy days I was afraid the dust might stick to the golden foil, and I came and covered up the pieces with oilcloth. In the daytime I was afraid the children or the sparrows might dirty them. And then I had to watch the workers every day, or it might not have been finished in two years. Now they are all painted, all thirty of them. The bedding, even the mosquito nets, all are ready. We were just waiting for you to come home to make the dresses." She said it all in one breath, but I did not answer a single word. I bent my head, and she thought it was girlish shyness.

I did not know how to begin all I wanted to say. It was better not to say anything about the engagement before Father came back. Mother was a stubborn woman, and it was no use talking to her. I passed two days like a dumb person. But in the village news spread faster than by the radio. The Hsiao family knew I was home. Chulin, the uncle of my fiance, wrote a letter to our family asking for the wedding date. Elder Brother showed me the letter.

"How are you going to answer?" he asked.

"Ask them to wait till Father comes."

But how was I to settle the problem? The wedding date could not be put off too long. If I did not hurry to break the engagement it might be too late.

It so happened that Father returned that very night. After reading the letter he came to ask me what I thought would be a suitable date.

"Father, I have come home especially to settle this matter," I began. "You must remember the letter I wrote you. I cannot possibly live with Hsiaoming. We are not even fond of each other; indeed, we feel absolutely nothing

想，興趣，都不和我相同，他的個性，我完全不了解，怎麼好同他結成夫妻呢？」

「你不願和他結合，難道你想離婚嗎？」父親一開口就拍起桌子來大罵。

「是的，我是爲解除婚約才回來的。」我從容地回答。

「嗚！你想解除婚約嗎？除非你永世不歸來，現在既回到了家裏，還想逃婚嗎？不怕你有天大的本領，也逃不出我的掌中。」母親做着要打的姿勢；父親也氣得遠遠地跑開了。我知道這時不能再繼續談下去，便退到寢室裏來給他們寫了一封五千多字，說明爲什麼要解除婚約的信。

第二天父親看了之後，不但不爲信中的話所感動。反而嚴厲地責備起來：

「在你信上，你要解除婚約的理由，最大的有兩個：（一）沒有愛情，（二）思想不同。現在我來答覆你：第一，愛情只有夫婦間才有的，愛情的發生，是在兩人結婚之後，絕對沒有在結婚之前，現在你還沒有和他結婚，當然沒有愛情。第二「思想」兩個字，只能用之於革命同志，而不能用於夫婦之間，試問，你和他是結成夫婦，組織一個「夫唱婦隨」的美滿家庭，去傳宗接後，能夠支持中饋，

toward each other. His ideas, his interests, differ altogether from mine. I cannot understand his character, I just do not understand him. How can I be his wife?"

"You don't want to live with him? Do you mean to say you wish to break the engagement?" Father shouted and banged on the table.

"Yes, I have come back to break it off," I replied calmly.

Mother shouted, angrily, "You can't break the engagement unless you leave this house and never come back. Now that you are here, do you suppose you are going to escape from marriage by running away? No matter what you do, you can't escape." She raised her hand as if to strike me. Father left the room puffing with anger, and I could not go on, and went to my bedroom and wrote a five-thousand-word letter explaining why I did not want to be married.

The next day, to my surprise, Father did not seem to be a bit touched by my words, but, with a severe countenance, started berating me.

"Your reasons for breaking the engagement are evident in your letter. First, no love, second, difference in ideas. Let me answer you: As to your first reason, love exists only between husband and wife. Love begins after marriage, and not before. You are not married to him yet, so of course you don't love him. As to your second reason, the question of 'ideas' comes up only between revolutionary comrades, not between husbands and wives. If you two are united, you will make a 'husbandsing-wife-accompany' sort of happy couple, and you will give birth to sons for the ancestors. Then you will be a model of the 'clever

就是個模範的賢妻良母，你又不是去和他革命，要思想相同幹什麼？」

「爸爸，要結婚後才能發生愛情，那只是舊的戀愛哲學，那只是封建社會獨有的怪現象。在現在，男女二人，一定要經過情感的進化，才能達到結婚的目的，最初由認識而成朋友，由朋友的情感，進到戀愛的階段，愛情達到最高點時，兩人就結合而成永久的伴侶，這就是所謂夫婦。至於思想一致，更屬重要了！朋友兩人的思想不同，尚且不能成為朋友，何況夫婦乃是一生的快樂與幸福的創造者。如果思想不同，各走各的路，愛情立刻會破裂的。況且現代的結婚，絕不是像封建時代一般，牠的目的僅僅在組織一個家庭；現代的婚姻，兩個人結合了，並不是只求自我的享樂，主要的在兩人同為社會服務。因此他們不但是夫婦，同時也應該是摯愛的朋友，忠實的同志；蕭明的思想是與我相反的，根本就失掉了和他結婚的第一個條件。」

「哼！思想；女人要那種危險的革命思想幹什麼？不過你是受過幾年師範教育來的，將來結婚後就允許你在鄉間當一個小學教師好了，我相信他決不會阻止你的。」

「快不要和他辯論了！」母親大嚷起來：「這東西簡直不是人，父母大於天，豈敢和我們做對！學校不知是什麼魔窟，凡是進去的人，都着了魔一般，回來鬧着離婚。」

wife and wise mother.' You are not going with him to join the revolution. Why should you need the same ideas?"

"Father," I replied, "love after marriage is your philosophy, a strange symptom of the old society. Nowadays man and woman become husband and wife through different stages of emotion. First they know each other as friends and the affection of friends develops into true love. And when love reaches its highest point, they unite and become companions for life. That is what marriage means. As to having the same ideas or beliefs, that is even more important. Two persons whose ideas differ could never be friends. How much more should this be true of marriage which should be the basis of happiness for a lifetime! If their ideas are different and each goes his own way, love will not last. Modern marriage differs entirely from that of the older times. The purpose then was simply to make a happy family. Today when two persons are married, they don't strive only for selfish happiness. The chief thing is that they must work together for society. They are sincere friends and faithful comrades, as well as husband and wife. Hsiao-ming's ideas are utterly different from mine. The first fundamental for a marriage with me is lacking."

"Huh!" my father exclaimed. "Ideas? What need has a woman of such dangerous revolutionary ideas? Of course, you have had several years of education and you will be allowed to be a primary school teacher after marriage. I don't think he will object to that."

"Don't argue with her any more!" Mother burst out. "She is not even human! We are her parent. How dare she oppose us? What kind of witch-house is the school! Every girl comes out of it bewitched and demands the

，祇要是父母代定的婚姻，不論好歹，都要離婚。」

「那當然，父母怎樣知道兒女需要什麼樣的妻子或丈夫呢？婚姻是人生的一件終身大事，當然要由自己做主，才能選擇到好的！」

我知道這幾句話，會引起他們的痛罵，但如果不說出來，我的腦子將要脹破了。

「快不要丟醜了，一個閩女，也能選擇丈夫的嗎？蕭家的名聲很好，他的伯父曾做過省議會的議員，在縣裏極有名望，全家都在外邊讀書，你的婆家送到我家來的禮物也不少了，前年你的未婚夫，又親自跑來替我拜壽，如果你現在做出這樣的醜事來，叫我如何對得起他們！俗語說：「好馬不吃回頭草，好女不嫁二夫郎。」你還記得烈女傳的故事嗎？」

「哼！烈女傳她還讀嗎？」父親打叉着說：「她只看些什麼自由戀愛這一類的小說，什麼誰家少女為婚姻自由而自殺，誰家兒郎為反對舊禮教而與家庭破裂這一類的報紙，她受了這些報紙小說的影響，所以也回來反對父母，反對禮教了！」

「笑話！禮教也敢反對的嗎？」母親越來越威風了，「牠是數千年來聖人立下的，難道你是個女孩子，也敢反對禮教嗎？唉！你也不想想，貞節牌坊是如何樹立的呀！人家十二歲的女孩子就知道守節，而你們這些講自由的人

breaking of the engagement her parents have settled! She has to break it, however good it is."

"Of course," I said. "How can parents know what kind of husband or wife their child should have? Marriage is a great part of life. Everyone has to choose for herself if marriage is to be successful!"

I knew these words would provoke them more than ever, but if I did not say them, my head would burst!

"Outrageous! A young girl picking a husband for herself!" Mother cried. "The Hsiao family has high standing. Hsiao-ming's third uncle was once a member of the provincial assembly and very well known. The Hsiaoos have all studied in the cities. And I have received so many presents from the family! Last year your fiance even came to congratulate me on my birthday. Now you are creating this scandal. How can I ever face them? The proverb says, 'A good horse will never turn round to look on past pasture; a good girl will never marry twice.' Do you remember the story in the Book of Heroines?"

Father interrupted. "Do you think she reads the Book of Heroines any more? She reads only new novels of free love, newspaper stories about how a girl committed suicide because she could not have freedom in marriage, and how a boy broke with his family because he hated the old conventions. She is affected by all this and is turning against her parents, against the conventions!"

"The old conventions were set by the sages thousands of years ago," Mother's tone became more and more severe. "And you, a girl, dare to defy them! Don't you know how chastity-monuments were built? even girls of twelve know the importance of chastity. And I am afraid your

，恐怕一年嫁二十四個，還沒有丈夫過年！』

現在我更加知道和她講道理，是絕對沒有用的，惟一的辦法是和他誓死奮鬥，下個不達到解除婚約，誓不甘心的決心。

太陽暖融融地照着，可是我的心是淒涼的！

遠遠地一個穿白長衫的男人向我走來，仔細一看，知道這是大哥。他問我一個人在這裏想什麼心事，我把剛才那幕滑稽劇全盤告訴了他。遲疑了很久，他皺着眉頭憂鬱地說：「你不應敢回來的，既到了家裏，我想……」

「你想什麼？難道要我犧牲，真的和蕭明結婚嗎？」

「我……我是這個意思。」

「不！我絕對不能和他結婚，我要奮鬥到底！」

「母親比歷史上古今中外任何專制帝王還要厲害可怕，你記得我爲了沒有得到她的同意帶你嫂嫂去益陽，回來時，她說我犯了「逆親順妻」的罪，罰我跪了兩小時，頭上還頂着一大盆水。還有，你二哥，三哥和你姐姐的婚姻，都是痛苦到了極點的，但誰也不敢提出離婚的話來，你雖然比我們都勇敢，但你恐怕只能在外面打仗，而不能回家來革命的吧？」大哥笑起來了。但我嚴肅的回答他：

「大哥，你不要諷刺我，不要估計我的力量太小，老實告訴你，我是早已知道回家就會被禁閉起來的，但我如果不將婚約解除，我在外邊將永久不能和人結合，蕭家無

group, who talk about freedom, won't pass a New Year with a husband even if you marry twenty-four times a year!"

I realized that it was completely useless to argue with her. The only way was to fight it out, not to give in until I had broken the engagement.

The sun was warm, but my heart was sad and cold.

I saw a man in a long white gown approaching and recognized him as my eldest brother. He asked me what I was doing out there alone, and I told him the whole melodrama that had just been enacted. He paused and knitted his eyebrows and said, "You ought not to have come home. Now that you are at home, I think . . ."

"What are you thinking?" I interrupted. "Do you want me to sacrifice myself and marry Hsiaoming?"

"I—that's what I mean."

"No, I cannot; I will fight to the end!"

"Mother is worse than any despot in history," said Eldest Brother. "You remember how she made me kneel down for two hours with a basin of water on top of my head, when she blamed me for being disobedient to my parents and listening to my wife. And your second and third brothers and your sister have suffered very much in their marriage, yet no one has dared to mention divorce. You are stronger than all of us, but although you might fight outside, you cannot rebel at home." He smiled a little, but I was serious and said:

"Don't be sarcastic and don't think too little of me. To tell you the truth, I knew that I would be either shut up or forced into marriage. But if I don't break the engagement legally, I cannot marry anyone. The Hsiao

論什麼時候都可持着婚書來找我搗亂；爲了免除麻煩，爲了我要正式向封建社會宣戰，我一定堅持到底！」

「我要回去了，萬一給母親知道我們在這裏談話，還以爲我和你聯絡的。」可憐的大哥，每分鐘都在東張西望地注意，看有沒有人望到了他。

「好吧，你只管回去，我不願連累你以及其他任何人。」

「好的，祝你孤軍奮鬥成功！」他仍然帶着諷譏的笑容走了。

我獨自在田間徘徊了很多時候才回家。我沒有吃晚飯，爲的是不敢看父母親的兩副冷鐵一般的面孔。黃昏剛過去，我就躺床睡了。

從今天起，我開始過着監獄似的生活了！

在鄉間，晚上過了八點鐘，就靜寂得像死一般，幽暗的漫漫長夜。但家裏的人今天特別睡得遲，也許是大家在議論我的事。月亮爬上了中天，淡淡的光輝射在我的帳子上，一隻蚊子在嗡嗡地叫着，除了這微弱聲音在打破夜之沉寂外，我幾乎懷疑我已躺在闕然無聞的墳墓中了。

翻來覆去地想着，我的問題，絕對不能和平解決的，父母已與我處在絕對相反的地位，我不能屈服，他更不肯讓步，不肯放棄做父母的威權。他們要貫徹「父要子亡，不得不亡」的封建社會的法律。

——自殺，倒是個最好的辦法，忍受一刹那的苦痛，

family could always bring out the letter of engagement and create endless trouble. Because I don't want this future trouble and because I want to declare war formally against the old society, I have decided to fight it out."

Poor Elder Brother was looking around every minute, afraid to be seen talking to me. He said, "I am going now. If Mother should find out that we are talking here, she would think I am conspiring with you."

"All right, you go back. I don't want to get you or anybody else involved."

"I wish you success, fighting single-handed!" he said, and went away with a cynical smile.

I wandered back and forth through the fields for some time before I went home. I did not take any supper, for I was afraid to see the cold faces of my parents, and went to bed as soon as night fell.

That day I began my life as a prisoner.

After eight o'clock the country was dead quiet and the night was long, lonely, and dreary. The family stayed up late, talking about me, I suppose. The moon climbed the sky and cast a feeble light on my mosquito net. A mosquito was humming. If it weren't for this little creature, I could have believed I was lying in a silent grave.

I tossed on my bed and thought over the whole matter. It could not possibly be settled peacefully. My parents and I were on exactly opposite grounds; I could not yield, and they would not retreat or abandon their authority as parents. They wanted to carry out the ancient law: "A son cannot refuse to die, if his father wants him to." We were three generations apart.

(Suicide seemed to be the best solution. A moment of

解除了一生的煩惱，憂愁。與其將活躍的生命付與別人去宰割，不如痛快地死在自己手裏；生命是我的，當然我有權利來處理，死是我最後的安息，也是我最後的勝利！

我似乎覺得除了「死」再找不出第二條出路了，昨天我還以為父親會同情我，會因我那封一字一淚的信而感動，可是今天的事實，證明了他是和母親站在一條戰線上的。他的強硬、冷酷的態度，那裏是過去用皮袍裹着我睡覺最痛愛我的爸爸呢？我這時完全明白了情感是什麼東西，在與自己的利益有衝突時，兒女不認父母為父母，父母更不認兒女為兒女，各人都為着自己的環境，自己的利益，自己的思想而鬥爭。

——死？難道你真的只有死路可走嗎？為什麼不想想自己的前途，自己的志願？你常常責備自殺的人太沒有勇氣，太懦弱，太不中用；求生，是一切生物的本能，何況一個有萬物之靈，具有創造社會一切的聰明底人，不努力求生，而真的去尋死嗎？你雖然是這樣渺小，即使真的自殺，於社會沒有絲毫影響，但你自己對得起社會嗎？對得起供給你吃飯，供給你衣穿，供給你受教育的勞動者嗎？你不想想，你是受過革命洗禮來的，你是一位兵士，你曾經上過火線，在槍林彈雨中做殺敵救同志的工作，你曾經宣誓，要為全世界被壓迫的勞苦羣衆解放而奮鬥；你曾否認自己是一個懦弱無能的普通女子，而是個有血性，有勇

氣，意志堅強的人！你是反抗一切不合理的舊制度底戰士……現在難道你真的忘記了自己的任務嗎？死，就是表示你的失敗，禮教的勝利。封建社會，這殺人不見血的惡魔，每天都張開着血嘴，在吞吃這些沒有勇氣奮鬥的青年，你也甘願給牠吞下去嗎？而且，你應該更進一步想，自殺是多麼愚笨的事呵，你死了，舊社會少了一個叛徒，就省掉了一顆子彈，即使你沒有勇氣拿着槍，跑上戰場去衝鋒殺敵，也應該作一點給敵人殺掉你的革命工作。無論如何，「被殺」總比「自殺」來得偉大，來得有價值！

「生」與「死」的鬥爭，整整地在腦海中交戰了一夜，最後，還是「生」得着了勝利。

第二天的晚上，我仍然沒有睡覺，眼瞪瞪地望到月亮從黑雲裏掙扎出來，又從光明的地方鑽回去。

深夜，打開窗子放進風來。從前綫歸來，因受了濕氣而浮腫潰爛的腳，痛得非常厲害，我整晚地呻吟哭泣，母親連叫我一聲都沒有。唉！現在我真的是被棄的孩子了！回想以前我有病時，她整日整夜地陪着我，殷勤地看護我。現在呢？即使我死在床上，她也不會來過問的。

月亮照着我的淚珠，滴在枕頭上，這一顆顆亮晶晶的淚珠呵，你跳到我母親的心裏去吧，月亮，你將我悲苦的消瘦的影子，照到我母親的眼裏去吧！她為什麼變得這樣殘忍，這樣冷酷呢？她是真的睡覺了，還是故意不理我呢？

大哥走了以後，每天期待着他的來信，可是一個月過

determination, courage, and hot blood. You are pledged to war against the old system. . . . Are you now going to quit? Death would be your failure and the triumph of the old society that is like a monster claiming its victims among the weak and faltering youth. Are you to be swallowed up by the monster, too? Besides, is not suicide very silly? If you take your own life, the old society would only gain by having one less rebel, by saving one bullet. At least you could let the enemy shoot you and die a revolutionist's death. No matter how, to be killed for something would be greater and more worthy than suicide.

The duel in my head between Life and Death lasted the whole night, and at last Life won!

The second night again I did not sleep. I watched the moon struggle through the black clouds and disappear into them again.

Deep in the night I opened the window to let the wind come in. My legs were still swollen from my service in the trenches, and were so painful that I wept. But Mother did not even call to me. I was really an abandoned child! I recalled how when I was sick, she used to sit day and night by my side and care for me devotedly. Now, even if I should die on this bed, she would not come and inquire about me.

The moon shone on the tears I dropped on the pillow. These crystallike tears, why could not they fly into my mother's heart? O Moon, why could you not bring my thin shadow before my mother's eyes? Why has she turned so cold, so cruel? Was she truly asleep, or was she purposely ignoring me?

Eldest Brother was gone. I waited for a letter from

去了，還是音信杳然。——一切只有自己靠自己了。

現在在外面寄給我的書信，統統要經過父親的檢查，發出去的更比監獄裏還要查得嚴格，那封託大哥帶到縣裏去發給孫伏園先生的信，幸而他藏在帽子底下，否則一定會被查出沒收的。這樣不自由的生活，怎麼過得下去呢？

翔的妹妹青青，是一個十二歲的，活潑而聰明的孩子，她在我和翔之間，做了許多令我們永遠不能忘記的事。她做我們的「交通」母親屢次罵她是密探或者間諜。她替我們傳話，但每次都要經過母親很久的盤問與搜查後，才允許她進我的房裏來。

有一天，突然我被母親從「監牢」裏叫出來，原來又是青青來了，我一眼望到了她，精神為之一振。「你姐姐好嗎？」

「當然囉，她比你好！」

正在母親聽了這話大發雷霆的當兒，她使一個眼色在地上，隨即鬆開了腳，讓我見到被她踏黑了的紙團。我怎樣拿到手呢？正在此時，忽然來了一個人會母親，他和那人談話去了，我就立刻拾了紙團，回到房裏去看。條子上是這麼簡單的幾個字：「這種生活再不能忍受了，我們決定逃走吧！」

這是一個使我憤恨，苦痛得幾乎要自殺的消息；表弟告訴我，每次我寄給朋友們的信，都到了父親的手裏了！

aim day after day, but a month passed without a single word of news. I had to depend entirely on myself.

Now all letters sent to me must pass through Father's hands, and my outgoing letters were even more strictly examined than in a prison. A letter I wrote to Mr. Sun Fuyuan for Eldest Brother to mail in town, was fortunately hid under his hat and was not discovered or it would have been found and confiscated. How could I go on with this life without freedom?

Hsiang had a sister, Chingching, a bright girl of twelve, who did things for Hsiang and me which we could never forget. She was our "communication line." She carried our messages and letters back and forth. Mother scolded her often for acting as a spy, and every time she was searched and questioned by Mother for a long time before she was allowed to see me.

One day I was called out of my prison. Chingching was there. I looked at her with gratitude and asked, "How is your sister? Is she all right?"

"Oh, yes. She is better off than you are!"

Hearing this, Mother burst out with anger; and while she was talking, Chingching cast her eyes toward the floor and lifted her foot slightly. I saw a soiled ball of paper under her shoe. How could I get it? Just then someone came to see my mother, and she went out. I picked up the ball of paper and hurried to my room. On the strip were written these few words: "I cannot stand this kind of life any more. We must escape!"

My cousin brought me the maddening news that all the letters I had written secretly at night to my friends asking for help had never reached them. They had all got

我比囚犯還不如了，他們尚且有通信的自由權。我心裏忿怒到了極點，我暈倒在姊姊的床上，她以為我得了什麼急症，嚇得手忙腳亂，我那時只知道用拳頭拚命地捶我的胸部，恨不得發拳就把我的心捶個粉碎，讓鮮血流出來，給狠心的父母看看。

「不要哭了吧，妹妹。即使你哭斷了腸子，他們也不會把信退還你的。」倒是姊姊這句話喚醒了我的愚笨。

他們既以高壓的手段對付我，我也以同樣的手段來回答他們吧！逃奔的計劃早就有了的，可是什麼時候實行？翔也被禁閉着，不能來看我，要逃走，我們兩人非同時動作不可的，不預先商量好，怎麼行呢？

慘痛的惡耗

一個雨天的黃昏，姨媽偷偷地送來了一封三哥給我的信，還沒有打開，我心裏就突突地跳個不住，我知道這是個不祥的預兆。果然，信紙上畫着幾個大大的字，二哥死在南京了。

天！一星期前，剛剛收到他的來信，難道真的死了嗎？

我不知那時的生活是怎樣過去的，我失去了靈魂，失去了生的興趣，再也沒有奮鬥的勇氣了，我整天都想死，都想到黃泉下去找尋痛愛我的二哥。

我們雖然有五兄妹，但感情和我最好的要算二哥。我

into Father's hands.

I was treated worse than prisoners who still have the right to communicate with the world outside. I was so angered that I fainted on my sister's bed, and they were frightened and thought I had some acute disease. Revived, I could only beat my chest with my fists. I wished I could tear out my heart and break it and show it, dripping blood, to my cruel parents!

It was my sister who made me realize my foolishness. "Don't cry any more, little sister," she said. "They won't return the letters even if you cry until your intestines break."

If they were going to use high-handed methods, I would do the same. I had a plan to escape, but when and how could I carry it out? Hsiang also was being watched closely in her home. We had to start at the same time, but how could we do so if we could not see each other and arrange it?

Tragic News

One rainy evening Auntie brought me secretly Third Brother's letter. My heart thumped before I opened it; I seemed to know it brought bad news. And indeed on the paper were written fatal words. Second Brother had died in Nanking.

And I had just had a letter from him last week! Could he really be dead?

I did not know how I could live on. It seemed that I had lost my own soul, all my interest in life, and I had no more courage. I wanted to go down underground to "the yellow spring" to meet my beloved brother.

We had been five together, sisters and brothers, and

在小學讀書時，他就介紹新的小說給我看；寫了很多有趣味的白話信給我；他極力誘導我走上了文學之路，那時他在山西進山中學教課；薪水並不多，但每年他至少要寄二十或三十元來給我買書。

二哥之死，在我的生命史上，是最傷心的一頁，我的心深深地劃上了無數血淋淋的傷痕。

我知道二哥的死，是封建社會逼死他的，我要報仇，我要將萬惡的封建社會，打個落花流水。

晚上，我吹熄了燈，靜靜地坐着等他的幽靈歸來！可是，一夜，二夜，十夜……在我的流淚與嘆息中過去了，房子裏靜悄悄地並沒有看見他的影子歸來。

我希望變隻小鳥和二哥飛去青島，飛去烟台，最美麗的樹林裏去，我們要飛到海的盡頭，天的頂點去，那是多麼廣闊無限的世界呵，任我們翱翔，任我們遊歷。

二哥的死，父親幾乎到了心痛欲絕的地步。母親也暈倒過兩次，但她一面在每天哭泣二哥之死，擦乾眼淚時，又在爲我預備嫁奩。我以爲她有了二哥的教訓擺在面前，或者她從此減輕對我的壓迫，甚至允許我解除婚約也未可知，豈知她仍舊固執着她的主張。

the one kindest to me had been Second Brother. When I was in primary school he suggested modern novels for me to read, and wrote me interesting letters. He encouraged me to take up literature, and when he was teaching in Shansi, although his salary was small, he would send me twenty or thirty dollars a year to buy new books.

The death of Second Brother is the saddest page in my life. It is like a deep wound in my heart.

I knew that he was a victim of this ancient society. I swore to avenge him, to overthrow this evil social system.

At night I blew out the light and sat quietly, waiting for his spirit to come back. However, one night—two nights—ten nights passed in weeping and sighing. The room was very quiet, but not a shadow of his spirit returned....

I wished I could change myself into a little bird and fly with Second Brother to Tsingtao, to Chefoo, to the Himalayas, to the loneliest island in the world, to the most beautiful forest, to the edge of the sea, to the top of the sky. These would be such a wide, infinite space for us to roam over in freedom, for us to enjoy.

Father could hardly get over the death of Second Brother. Mother fainted twice, but while crying over Second Brother, she was at the same time preparing for my wedding. I thought that with his martyrdom in marriage as an example, perhaps she would relent and treat me more kindly—perhaps even let me—cancel the engagement. But she held to her decision.

第五章

逃 奔

這是一個很好的機會，我和翔假託燒香拜觀音菩薩的名義，來到朝陽庵了。這天恰是所謂觀音菩薩的第三個生日，母親是特別信仰觀世音的。只要我真的說一句去燒香的話，她一定允許的。雖然聰明的她，生怕我借故和翔去商量什麼秘密計劃，但是她的自信力特別強，以為無論我怎樣厲害，總是逃不出她的手掌的。

我和翔是完全爲了商量逃走的問題，才來到朝陽庵的。我們也提着籃子，裏面盛了些線香，木香和紙錠。木香上面寫着「信女瑞鳴叩叩還觀音大士保香一炷」等字。

我們跪在地上叩了四個頭，匆忙地把香燒完了之後，就想跑到山頂上去商量我們逃走的計劃。誰知又被那些拜佛的女人拉住了，要我們替他們寫木香上的字，好容易寫完了。才有機會給我們溜開。

在一處古柏樹最多的山坳裏，我們膝頭緊靠着膝頭地坐着，枯黃的樹葉隨着秋風在天空中飛舞，哀怨的蟬聲，似哭泣一般地叫着，山林顯得很是淒涼。

我對她說，我早已打定注意，就是最近走吧！什麼都不要帶，只要逃出了虎口，「我們即使沿門托鉢，或者替

CHAPTER V

ESCAPE

A WONDERFUL OPPORTUNITY CAME WHEN Hsiang and I took burning incense for the Buddha as an excuse to visit the Chacyang Temple. It was the so-called third birthday of the Goddess of Mercy. Mother believed most of all in this Goddess, so that when I said I wanted to burn incense, she let me go. Though she suspected that I might be making secret plans with Hsiang to escape, her belief in herself was strong. She thought I could never escape from her hands no matter how clever I was.

Hsiang and I went to the temple only to plan for our escape. We took our baskets of incense, coils, joss sticks, and paper money. On the joss sticks was written "Your religious daughter Hsieh Mingkang burns a stick of incense in worship of the Goddess of Mercy."

We knelt down and kowtowed four times, then burned our incense in a hurry, hoping to go up the mountain and make our plans. We were delayed by other women pilgrims who wanted us to write their names for them on their incense sticks, and not until we finished that did we have a chance to talk.

At the foot of a rise, surrounded by pine trees, we sat down with our knees close to each other. The dry, yellow leaves were dancing in the autumn wind. The cicadas were singing mournfully; the forest seemed deserted.

I told her that I had already made up my mind, and that we must escape as soon as possible, taking nothing, but just to get out of this tiger's mouth. "We can live as independent nuns or even serve as maids," I said. "It

人苦了，也比較現在的生活要痛快些！即使活活地眼死在裏面，我也願意的。」

我們決定約定個確實的日子，和相會的地點及時間，出獄時不要在一塊，免得有被別人看出的危險。剛談到這裏，母親着人來找我們了。兩個人藏着滿腔未說完的話，又只好回到黑暗的牢獄中。

我的計劃，不久將實現，我對姊姊她們談話時我告訴她們我是怎樣了解母親的受我，以後我要守本份地過生活，我信仰父母大於天。這些話初傳進她們的耳裏時，總帶着懷疑的態度問我：「你們讀書的，也相信菩薩嗎？」

「要不是讀書的人信菩薩，爲什麼寫出一大本一大本的佛經給你們天天唸呢？」

以後母親看見我幫着她收拾箱子裏的衣服，綢緞，布疋，刺繡……等等，居然什麼事都和我商量了：

「衣服，就隨你的意思去做吧，只要你歡喜什麼樣式，就叫裁縫怎麼做好了。不過你不要縫得太短，鄉裏人太不開通；還有些綢緞，我是替你保留了十幾二十年的，都給你做衣服吧！至於紅的緞子，除了給你做被窩外還留有一些，將來等你生了孩子後。再替外孫做花襖子。」

我想告訴她：「媽，你不要做夢了！」但爲了要實現我的計劃，我沒有說。

would be better than this kind of life even to see a stranger in another village."

We agreed that to start from the same place would be too dangerous, and that we should appoint a place and date to meet. Then the man whom mother had sent to bring us back came for us, and we had to leave unsaid all else that was in our minds and I went back to my dark prison.

Now that my plan was soon to be carried out, I talked to my sister and sisters-in-law and told them I had come to understand Mother's love for me and wanted to live dutifully from now on, and that I believed that "parents were greater than heaven." When they heard this they asked me doubtfully, "Do you, who have studied books, believe in Buddha, too?"

"If those who had studied did not believe in Buddha," I replied, "who produced the Buddhist sutras, volume after volume, for the people to chant?"

"When I began to help Mother in packing my dresses and cloth and thread and embroidery in the trunks, she began to consult with me about everything.

"You can have the dresses according to your own taste," she said. "Whatever style you like, just tell the tailor. But don't make them too short. The villagers here are conservative. Here are some pieces of silk and satin which I have kept for you for ten or twenty years, that could be made into dresses. Of this piece of red satin, there will still be some left after the quilts are made out of it, and this we will save to make little caps when your baby is born.

I felt like telling her, "Mother, don't dream any more!"

有時在寂靜的午夜，我想着他們的悲哀。父親是最愛我和二哥兩人的，而現在二哥是死了，我呢？將比二哥更使他們傷心。他們就是像含泥劬巢的燕子一般，——「燕子含泥空費力，養大毛兒各自飛。」母親教給我兒時的歌曲，如今是做了她自身的寫照了。不過這是沒有辦法的，人生就是整個的屬於社會的，「父母的兒子」底時代早已過去了，社會的進化，時代的洪流，已隔開了父與子的關係，這決不是人類的感情起了什麼變化。

第一次 奔

這是十月十八日的那天，哥哥叔母請我和父母親三人去吃早飯，這半年來無論誰來邀我出去，母親總是拒絕的，不知怎的，這次竟答應了。但爲了這天中午，自己家裏也要請客，她要辦菜，沒有工夫去，只好要三嫂陪了我去，名義上是陪，實際上是監服我的言語行動。

我第一眼望到的是翔，坐在已經擺好了杯筷的桌子上，我喜歡得幾乎要流淚了。

這天主人是請一個新娘子，酒席有三桌，女的占了三分之二。我和翔像平時一般地玩皮，不住的找新娘子開玩笑，但隔壁有位老太太告訴她說：「新娘子，你不要胆小，她們兩位也快要做新娘了，你就告訴她們一些做新娘子應當知道的常識吧！」

but for the sake of my plans I had to be silent.

Sometimes in the lonely night I thought how they would feel later and felt sorry for them. Second Brother and I had been father's favorites. Second Brother was dead. And I was going to hurt them more than Second Brother's death did. They were like swallows working busily at their nest. "The swallow building her nest is wasting her energy, for when the little swallows' wings grow strong, they will fly away." This was a song mother used to sing to me when I was little; now it became a portrait of herself. I could not help it. A person's life belongs to society; the time of being only a "parents' child" has passed. It is not that human nature has changed, but time and progress have cut the bonds between parents and child.

The First Escape

It was the eighteenth of October. Uncle Yiwu had invited Father, Mother, and myself to breakfast. For the past six months Mother had declined every invitation to me, but this one was accepted. We were to have guests for lunch, so that Mother had to prepare things and could not go, and asked Third Sister-in-law to go with me, nominally to keep me company, actually to guard me and watch my every word and movement.

The first person I noticed was Hsiang, sitting near the table all set with bowls and chopsticks. I was so happy that I could have cried.

The party was in honor of a bride and there were three tables, two occupied by women. Hsiang and I were as lively as ever and kept teasing the bride until an old lady said, "Bride, don't be too shy. They too will be brides soon. Tell them some of the practical knowledge a bride

酒席很豐富，本來鄉下普通請客，只有六大碗的，但這天却有八碗，大家吃到歡天喜地，有說有笑的。

誰也沒料到在一剎那間，會發生一件開轟鄉間的新聞。我在翔的腿上用力捻了一下，就算『開步走』的信號。酒，滿杯滿杯地滿着。菜，一碗一碗的出着。

突然我用手按着肚子，彎下了腰，並且喊了起來，表現着我不能忍耐的痛苦。同席的人都放下了筷子，呆呆的望着我。

『不要緊，我因為昨夜受了涼，剛才又多吃了些東西，所以肚子脹得痛，對不起，等一下我再來陪諸位。』

假託去廁所的名義，我退了席，翔也陪我走了出來。我們真的一同跑進了廁所。

『走吧，是時候了！』我說。

我們一溜就溜到後面的山坡上，二隻惡狗汪汪的叫着起來。從破爛的屋子裏，走出一個中年婦人來，她凝視着我們，惶恐她看出了我們的秘密，我故意現着從容的態度，慢慢的走着，像散步似的；但內心裏却像火燒眉毛一般地着急。

『翔，放開步走吧！那個女人已經進屋去了。』

恐怖，充滿了我們的每個細胞，我們改走了一條田徑很狹小的路，兩隻腳像車輪一般地向前滾着，兩個飛跑的影子映在清澈的水田中，汗珠如雨點一般地流下來，兩人都走得氣喘喘地，像一匹駝了千斤重担子的驢一般疲勞，但絕不敢有一秒鐘的休息或遲緩。

must have!"

The feast was plentiful. Usually a feast in the village contained only six dishes, but this had eight and everybody seemed to be enjoying it.

Nobody knew that something was going to happen which was to create a sensation in the village.

I pinched Hsiang's leg; that meant "Now is our chance." Wine cups were being filled and refilled, and the courses were to be served one after another.

Suddenly I pressed my stomach hard with one hand, and bent over and cried out with an expression of uncontrollable pain. They laid down their chopsticks and looked at me.

"I did not cover myself properly and caught a cold last night," I said. "Now I think I have eaten too much. Please excuse me."

With this as an excuse I left the table and Hsiang went with me, and we went into the privy.

"This is the time!" I said.

We ran out to the hill behind the house. Two dogs barked fiercely, and a woman came out of a hut, staring at us. We tried to appear calm and slackened our pace to an easy stroll. But I was as excited inside as if my eyebrows had caught fire.

"Hsiang, let's run!" I cried. "The woman has gone in."

Fear filled every little cell in our bodies. We turned into a narrow by-path. Our legs rolled like wheels, and our bodies made moving shadows on the rice field. Perspiration fell like raindrops, and both of us were breathless and tired as a camel after carrying a thousand-catty load, but we dared not rest or even slow down.

一座一座的山，一排一排的田，在我們兩邊飛奔過去。

『再會吧，黑暗的牢獄！充滿了封建臭氣的故鄉！』

但我們達到江邊，正在匆忙地和一個船老板講船價錢時，忽然發現了我的母親就站在我們的後面，二個轎夫正在用衣袖擦着額上的汗。

『沒有希望了！』我的內心怎樣的叫喊起來。

母親真有超人的政治手腕。當她看到許多人正在臨近的伙舖吃着午飯，所以一點也不露出怒容，反而笑嘻嘻地向船老板及旁觀的人解釋：

『她們倆真是未來的女博士，爲了急於要出外讀書，簡直一天都不靠船，天沒有下雨，船怎麼好開呢？』

『船是可以用開的，不過水小一點。』船老板當然希望做了這筆生意。

『水小，船當然走得慢。』母親繼續說：『與其在路上耽擱日子，不如在家裏好好的等候幾天。』

『年輕的人是性急的，你老人家是來趕她們回去的嗎？』另一個老年人這樣誠懇地問母親。

『是的，我想留她多吃幾只肥鷄才走，船老板，對不起，天老爺下了雨，再來做你的生意吧！』

我們逃走的事，傳遍了整個鄉間，整個的藍田。

『那兩個傢伙的胆量可真不小，居然敢在白天，而且

We passed field after field and hill after hill. 人及三景

"Good-by to that dark prison, our old feudal vill'ge!"

I whispered.

But just as we reached the river, and were arguing with the boatman about his price, I suddenly tripped and saw Mother behind me! Two sedan chair carriers stood there panting and wiping their faces with their sleeves.

"We are lost!" my heart shouted within me.

Mother was an extremely polished politician. She did not show a whit of anger, because there were so many people lunching in the near-by restaurant. On the contrary, she explained with a beaming face to the boatman and the crowd around us:

"They are going to be girl scholars. They are so anxious to go to school that they could not wait a single day! But it hasn't rained yet, and the water is low for sailing."

"You can sail, except that the water is a little low," said the boatman who wanted of course to earn some money.

"The boat will have to go slowly if the water is low," Mother continued. "It is better to stay at home for the days you would waste on the way."

"Young people are always impatient," an old man said innocently. "Do you want them to go back?"

"Yes, I want them to eat a few fat chickens at home before they start. I am sorry, boatman; we shall have to give you business after Father Heaven gives us rain!"

Our attempt to escape was told all over the vill'ge and in Nantien.

"The two little imps were really bold to run away

是三桌人圍着的席上偷着逃走！」

「女人敢這樣自由運動，真是無法無天！」

「唉！唉！糟了，糟了！世界真正變了！『黃花女』也敢做出逃奔的醜事來，還成什麼話！」

現任的生活，更不自由更痛苦了！朋友們寄給我的信件或雜誌，通通被母親付之一炬，青青再也不敢來傳消息了，甚至連同住在一家的姊姊，嫂嫂，姨母們，母親也禁止來會我。

晚上從小小的窗子裏望出去，蔚藍的天，嵌着白玉似的月亮，遠遠地送過來幾聲驚人的犬吠，我懷疑着，也許這就是我的幽靈在遊行。

第二次逃奔

在一個細雨霏霏的黑夜，我又做了第二次的逃奔者。這天，母親因為清理我的衣箱，累得太疲倦，很早就睡覺了，聽到她呼呼的鼾聲，我忽然又起了奔逃的念頭。但右邊的門是鎖得緊緊的，左邊的是通母親房裏。窗口更釘着一根一根的粗大木頭，加以又有堆積着一丈多高的磚石在阻礙着，最妥當的辦法，我決定只有開通母親房裏的門，假借口渴要吃茶的名義跑了出去。幸運得很，起來開門的是父親，他沒有想到在這冷雨淅淅的深夜裏，會發生一件他意想不到的陰謀，他摸着開了門後又躺下了。

我忽然聽到三嫂的女兒在啼哭，就悄悄地走去叩她的

in broad daylight from a three-table breakfast."

"There is really no law and no heaven, if women begin to act so freely!"

"Ah! The world is coming to an end. Young girls daring to run away! What a scandal!"

New things became even worse than before. The magazines and letters that my friends sent me were thrown into the fire. Chingching dared not carry news any more. Even my sister and sisters-in-law and aunts were not allowed to see me.

At night I looked through my tiny window and saw the beautiful dark sky, with the moon like a piece of white jade. I heard the barking of dogs, and I wondered whether I still had a body, or whether it was not only my soul left wandering in this village.

The Second Escape

It was a dark night with a light drizzle when I tried for the second time to run away.

Mother had been packing my trunks and, tired out, she had gone to bed early; as soon as I heard her snoring, I thought of escape. The door on the right was securely locked, while the one on the left led to Mother's room. The window was nailed up with many planks, and there was a big pile of bricks and stones outside. I decided that the best way was to knock on the door leading to Mother's room on the pretext of going out to get a drink of tea. Fortunately, it was Father who came to open the door. He did not suspect anything could happen on this cold rainy night and, as soon as he had opened the door in the dark, he groped back to bed.

I heard Third Sister-in-law's daughter crying and

門，問孩子是不是飢餓得太厲害了？她很驚訝我半夜三更，怎麼能夠跑出來，我告訴她是得到了母親的允許的，她才敢開了門讓我進去。

「今晚我就在你這裏睡了吧，剛才我做了一個惡夢，一個人睡，怪可怕的。」我哀求她。

「不可能，如果母親知道了，會罵死我的，還是點了燈送你回去吧。」

「一切有我自己擔當，你放心好了。」我說完後，我就躺下了。

幾分鐘後，母親來到三嫂房裏尋找我了，她用燈向我的臉上照了很久，然後大聲地叫着：「起來，過那邊睡去！」

「媽，不要喊醒她吧，慫恿在這兒睡一晚，沒有關係的。」三嫂聽到我的肝聲，以為我真的睡覺了，就這樣說。

「好，如果她明天不見了，就只找你要人！」

「笑話，同在一個床上，失掉了一個人，還成什麼話！」

雨，越下越大了，整個的天空，是黑漆漆的，為孩子而受許多辛苦的她，早已熟睡得像泥人一般了。靜悄悄地，我爬了起來，開了通柵面山路的房門，忽然我家的那隻黑狗汪汪的大叫了幾聲，狗認識是主人，也就停止了吠聲。

我走上了一條小路，我決定這次不經過藍田了，當我一想到什麼山上都有挖煤礦的人，我又害怕了。

雨，稍為停止了，空中忽然現出一道灰白色的光輝來，也許真是上帝賜給我的一線光明吧？

knocked at her door and asked her if the child was hungry. She was surprised to hear me at her door at this hour of the night, and only after I told her that I had Mother's permission did she dare let me in.

"Let me sleep with you tonight," I pleaded. "I had an awful dream and I dare not sleep alone."

"Oh no, if Mother finds out, she will scold me to death. Let me light a lamp and show you back."

"I will be responsible for whatever happens," I said, and lay down.

A few minutes later Mother came into the room. She held the lamp close above my face and said: "Get up and go to sleep in your own room!"

Third Sister-in-law heard my snoring and thought that I was really asleep and said, "Don't wake her. There is really no harm in her sleeping here for a night."

"All right, if she disappears you will be responsible!" said Mother.

"Nonsense. How could I lose a person while sleeping in the same bed with her!"

It began to rain harder and harder; the night was pitch dark, Sister-in-law, exhausted from looking after her child, slept soundly. Noiselessly I crawled out and opened the door that led to the mountain path behind. Our black dog began to bark, then recognized me and stopped.

I followed a little road up the hill. I would not go to Nantien this time. Then I thought of the coal diggers in the hills, and was afraid.

The rain ceased, and there was a little beam of gray light in the sky. Could it be that God had sent me this ray of light?

山路是這樣的崎嶇，加之雨後泥濘不堪，更難行走，我已經跌倒四次了，滿身都是黃泥，臉也弄髒了。我狂奔着，像有無數萬敵人，在後面追我一般。我從山上滾到一條小溪裏去了，臉部和手，都被荊棘刺破。全身已經濕透，現在我真的變成一個泥血模糊的野鬼了。

遠遠地望去，似乎有點紅光在閃動，起初，我以為是流星，但漆黑的天空，決沒有星星出現的道理，然而紅光越閃越近，越來越大了。

我迅速地站了起來，可是腿是沉重的，週身像發瘋癱瘓似的不住地顫抖，我索性又坐了下去，閉上了眼睛。

當我睜開眼睛向前仰視時，忽然發現二個高大的鬼影，站在離我不遠的溪澗上，有一個高高將火舉起來大聲喊着：

「喂，你看，在那裏，在那裏！」

「鬼，鬼，鬼！」我大聲地叫喊着。

「我們是人不是鬼，你不用害怕，和我們回去吧，你媽媽很耽心你深夜受了驚呢。」

他們兩個人把我拖回了家。

我發現前面還有一條黑狗，這一條小黑狗把我追上了。

家裏所有的人，除了小孩，通通都起來了，堂屋裏的鐘聲也點着了，亮晶晶地像過新年似的熱鬧。

母親兇惡的面孔，比閻王還可怕，可憐的三嫂，眼皮紅腫的呆望着我發抖，我用感激與悲哀的眼光回答了牠。

The mountain road was uneven and slippery after the rain. I fell four times and my body and my face were all covered with mud. I ran as fast as I could, as if thousands of enemies were on my track. I slipped and rolled down the hill into a little brook, and my face and hands were cut by thorns. My body was wet through. I must have looked now like a wandering ghost of blood and pain.

In the distance there seemed to be a twinkling red light. At first I thought it was a falling star, but there could be no stars on such a night. The light came nearer and grew bigger.

I got up quickly, but my feet were heavy and my body was shaking as if I had high fever. I sat down hopelessly again and shut my eyes.

When I opened my eyes and looked, there were two tall black shadows on the bank of the brook. One of them, holding a torch high in the air, shouted:

"There she is!"

"Ghost!" I cried.

"We are not ghosts, but men. Don't be afraid. Come back with us. Your mother is worrying about you."

They dragged me home by force.

I saw the black dog running in front of us. It was the little black dog that had tracked me!

In the house everyone except the children was up, and the religious lantern in the hall was lighted. The place was brightly illuminated like New Year's Eve.

Mother's face was more terrible to look at than the king of devils. My poor sister-in-law was trembling, looking at me with sad and swollen eyes. I looked back at her to express my gratitude and misery.

第三次奔逃

距結婚的日子，只差二十天了，蕭家去了好幾個電報催促蕭明即回家，但他接到了我那封發給他的哀的美敦書，所以不敢回來。兩家的父母都很着急，尤其母親簡直像熱鍋上的螞蟻一般，白天行坐不安，飯也吃不下，連最爱的酒也不喝了，晚上更是通宵失眠，不是咒罵我，便是找父親埋怨，說他不該送我讀書去，否則她早已做了外婆。

嫁粧，和一切的日用品，都準備好了，在父親面前，我已好幾次告訴過他：

「即便硬把我抬到蕭家去，也只有兩個前途給你看到：不是自殺，便是逃走。」

這些話父親也曾對母親講過，他現在相信我的確不會和蕭明結合的，但母親堅持着她的見解：

「自殺？她是故意恫嚇你的。逃走？她嫁過去，一個人守着這許多東西，就會捨不得離開了，而且女人只要到了男人手裏，無論她怎樣強悍，也會像小羔羊一般溫柔的。假若蕭明是聰明的，待她好一點，我怕她永遠也不想往外跑了。」

我又逃奔了！這次我化裝着像一個中年的農婦。這回來趕我回去的，不是兇惡的母親，也不是強壯的農夫，而是穿着紳士長衫，搖搖擺擺走着的大哥和姊夫。當他們在一間店門口，攔住我時，我就立刻從懷裏取出早就預備好了的刺刀架在自己的頸項上，向他們說：「這次如果你們再把我拖回去，我就立刻死在你們的面前！」

The Third Escape

It was only twenty days from the wedding date. The Hsiao family had sent telegrams to tell Hsiaoming to come back, but he had received my ultimatum and did not come home. The parents of both families were very anxious, especially Mother, who could not sit still or eat or even drink her favorite wine. She was like an ant on a hot pan. She could not sleep at night, and cursed me and blamed Father for sending me to school. She said that she should have been a grandmother long since.

The trousseau and everything were prepared, but I said to my Father again and again:

"If you want to carry me by force to the Hsiao family, there are only two ways out, suicide or escape."

Father repeated these words to Mother. He was now convinced that I would not marry Hsiaoming, but Mother was firm as ever.

"Suicide? She is using it as a threat. Escape? When she is married she will have so many things that she will not want to part with them. After a woman comes into a man's home, she is always as gentle as a lamb. If Hsiaoming is clever he will be nice to her, and she will never want to run away."

I escaped again. This time I disguised myself as a middleaged peasant woman, and this time it was not an angry mother or strong villagers who brought me back. It was my elder brother and my brother-in-law, waddling in the long gowns of the gentry. I found them blocking my way in a street. I had a sharp knife and, holding it close to my throat, I said, "This time if you try to drag me home, I will die before your eyes!"

大哥連忙從我手裏把刀子奪過去，架在他自己的頸項上說：「如果這次回去還受虐待，不許你出來，你可以用這刀子殺了我！」

「而且也殺了我吧，」姐夫又從大哥的手裏奪過了刀子來，「兩條性命，總可抵你一條吧。」

我再也不願入他們的圈套。他們唯一的對付方法就是要那兩個預先僱好了的壯丁，用武力壓我回去！

終於又被他們拉回去了。這次母親半句話也不說，父親用氣得發抖的眼光望着我，我不覺低下頭來。她們見了我這種農婦的裝束，誰也不敢笑出聲來，只有芸寶問：「媽，姨母爲什麼穿這樣的襖衣服？」姐姐忙搖手不叫她作聲。

三天以後，媒婆坐着轎子來催親了。

「新郎回來了，恭喜恭喜！」

全家都忙得像戰場上打仗的兵士一般，姊姊和三嫂常常偷偷的跑來我房裏流淚，嘆息，她們的內心充滿了恐怖和憂愁，那一幕意想不到的悲劇，會發生在洞房花燭之夕的。

家庭中的人都來恭賀我，說着什麼「菩薩保佑你」的話，但我回答她們一聲：「我自己也快要做菩薩了。」

鄉村中的每個人都在等着看一幕又喜又悲的齣劇。一個怪物——叛逆的女性，做了他們茶餘酒後的話題。

第四次奔逃

以下我所取的行動，並不是爲了怕社會的批評，也不是爲了怕社會的驚奇，而實是爲了母親。我覺得我的行爲

Elder Brother snatched the knife from my hand and held it near his own throat. "If you go back and are shut up or ill-treated again, you can kill me with this knife," he said.

"And kill me too!" Brother-in-law said, snatching the knife from Elder Brother's hand. "Our two lives are equal to yours."

But I would not be trapped. The only way for them was to summon the two strong guards they had brought and force me home.

So I was forced to return home. This time Mother did not say a word. Father looked at me in such rage that I had to lower my head. No one dared to laugh at my peasant dress. Only Yunpao asked, "Mother, why does Auntie have that ugly dress on?" Sister silenced her by waving her hand.

Three days later the matchmaker came in a sedan chair.

"The bridegroom has come. Congratulations!" she cried.

The whole family was as upset as soldiers going to battle. My sister and third sister-in-law came to my room and shed tears and sighed, for they felt a sense of tragedy. Something terrible might happen on the wedding night.

Others in the family came to congratulate me, saying such things as "May Buddha bless you!" But I said to them in disgust, "I am going to be a Buddha soon, too."

Everybody in the village was waiting to see a tragic-comedy. This monster, a rebellious daughter, had become the subject of tea-house and wine-shop gossip.

The Fourth Escape

What I did then, I did not because I was afraid of society, still less for the curiosity of it, but merely on

我家的鄉村離開蕭家約有三十里路，中間有許多小山和農村。我的嫁妝用八個人抬着，再加上轎夫和音樂隊，行列當中差不多共有一百五十多個人，一路上吹吹打打的十分熱鬧，我坐在花轎裏邊，輕輕地撩起紅巾，用掛在我頭子上的一面小鏡，照一照我自己的怪相，覺得樣子真可笑極了。我腳上的兵士式草鞋已經換了一雙繡花的紅鞋，我那握槍的手已經戴上了金戒子和金手鐲。

最難受的時刻大概就算是那天的晚上了。如果他是不講理的或野蠻的，那末這天晚上無疑的必會發生不幸的事情。我心裏早在算計，如果他真的不講理，或有野蠻舉動，那是我決計不忍受的。一個女子的貞節當然不能斷送在一個她所不愛的人手裏。我決計抵抗。我情願拚命，決不屈服。

此後要想逃走，自然較為煩難，但我終要時刻留意，覓機脫身的。我自己計算，只要我能夠運用我的智力，有着意旨力和膽力，那末我總有一天會達到目的。我如果有膽力，大約決不致於失敗。因此，當旁人都以為我已經服從了舊禮教時，決料不到我已經在暗地裏作第四次逃奔的打算了。

我的花轎快到蕭家的門前時，爆竹的聲音更多更響。我極力地自己鎮靜，但我的心依舊免不了突突的跳個不停。

"All right, let her have her natural face."

From our village to the Hsiao home was about thirty li, with many villages and hills on the way. There were about eighty people carrying my *trosses* for display, and with the chair carriers and the band the procession had about one hundred and fifty people and was festive with the playing of drums and horns. Inside the chair I lifted my veil and took out the little mirror that hung on a chain around my neck to take a look at myself, the clown of the show. It was really ridiculous. Embroidered shoes had taken the place of the straw sandals I wore as a soldier. My hand instead of holding a gun now wore a golden ring and bracelets.

The hardest time probably would be tonight. If he should be unreasonable or brutal, unhappy things would happen tonight! If he becomes unreasonable and obstinate, I thought, I will not endure it. A girl's chastity must not be sacrificed to a man she does not love. I will not make such useless sacrifice. I will resist. I will gamble with my life but not yield.

Escape would be more difficult hereafter, but I must watch for an opportunity at any time. If I use my intelligence, I thought, and have will power and courage, I shall reach my goal one day. If I had courage I could not possibly fail. Thus when everyone thought I had surrendered to the old conventions, I was planning my fourth escape.

When the sedan chair reached the gate of the Hsiao family, the noise of firecrackers became louder and more constant. With all my effort to be calm, my heart beat fast.

一個穿着新衣的婦人走來把我攙出了轎子，先到媒人的女兒華珠的房中去休息，以便蕭家可以做行禮的預備。

到了晚上，新房裏邊已擠滿了鬧新房的客人。當中除了兩個女孩兒之外，其餘完全是男客，一半是蕭家的親戚，一半是蕭明的同學。我起初是呆若木鷄一般聽任他們取笑。但他們後來竟越來越討厭了，我忍不住向他們說了一番話，他們聽了，自己覺得沒趣，便逐個的溜了出去，到夜半時，新房裏邊的客人已走光了。最後的一位客人是由蕭明扮着笑臉，硬推出去的。

我把油燈的芯子拮低一些，使房裏邊變成昏暗。我移身坐在快要熄滅的火爐旁邊，默默地看着蕭明的憂慮神色。

他輕輕地從房門首走回來。我低着頭呆看着爐中的火光。他加了一些煤，走過來坐在我的旁邊。

「今天你太辛苦了，我很過意不去。」他說，「但在頑固的家庭裏邊，這是沒有辦法的啊。」他說時，聲氣很抑鬱，還有些顫抖。我這時倒有些可憐他。

「凡是可以使觀衆興奮的把戲總是值得做的。」我回答。

「你以為今天所演的是一齣悲劇呢？還是一齣喜劇呢？」他問。

A woman wearing a new dress came and helped me out, and we went into Hua Tsu's house to rest for a while before the moment when they should let off more fire-crackers and shout, "The ceremony begins!"

With all the merrymaking, night finally came and the bridal chamber was filled with the guests who had come to "tease the bride" as was customary. No woman was present, but two little girls came in with the crowd. Half of the group were relatives and half were Hsiaoming's schoolmates. At first I acted as dumb as a piece of wood while they made silly jokes. But when they began to be disgusting, I gave them a lecture, and finally it no longer seemed funny and they went away a few at a time, until by midnight they were all gone. Hsiaoming drove the last guests out of the room with a forced smile.

I turned down the wick in the lamp to make the room dim and seated myself near the fire which was going out, pondering over Hsiaoming's melancholy expression.

He came back through the door very quietly, almost like a ghost. I was staring at the fire with my head bent almost touching my knees. He put more coal into the stove and came to sit beside me.

"I am sorry to have you go through all this today," he said. "Don't feel too badly about it. One is really helpless with such an obstinate family." His voice was sad and almost trembling. At that moment I began to feel sorry for him.

"Whatever play excites the audience is worth performing" I replied.

"Do you consider what we performed today a tragedy or a comedy?" he asked.

「從你那方面說起來是一齣悲劇，但在我的一方則是一齣喜劇。」

「這話怎講？難道你依舊想要逃走嗎？」

「很對不起，我們不妨沉住氣開誠公佈地討論一下子。我們應當決定怎樣結束這次的傀儡戲。」我這樣說。

雙方默不作聲，直待過了十分鐘。我方對他詳細的解釋沒有愛情的婚姻是如何不合。他表同情地點着頭，但在我說完之後，他即堅決地說：

「或許你之所以不愛我者，是因為我沒有和你同去從軍的原故。但我從小就很愛你，不論你怎樣冷待我，我總是永遠愛你的。」

「愛情是不能強迫的，」我說，「你不能強迫一對沒有愛情的男女結婚，也不能强行折散一對相愛的男女。你儘可以逼着自己的意思愛着我，而我也可以逼着自己的意思不愛你。我不能阻止你的愛我，正如你的不能硬勸我愛你。為雙方的前途打算，我們不如爽爽快快的結束了這一次的婚姻。你可以另娶一位合於理想的太太，則她必能幫助你設起一個美滿的家庭，而我也可以嫁一個合於理想的丈夫，以求終身的快樂。我以為這是於雙方，並且也是於國家最有利的辦法。請千萬不要固執，因而毀滅了雙方的前途。」

我們討論了整整的一夜，有許多女人立在門外想偷聽我們的說話，但因我們是用着一種長沙土語相談，所以她們完全聽不懂。

第二夜，我們繼續討論，所以又整夜沒有睡覺。

"From your side it is a tragedy, but from mine a comedy."

"What do you mean? Are you still thinking of running away?"

"I am sorry," I said, "Let's talk it over plainly and calmly. Let's decide upon the end of this marionette show."

Ten minutes passed before a word was said; then I gave him a long discourse on the difficulties of a marriage without love. He nodded sympathetically, but when I finished he said resolutely:

"Perhaps the reason you have no love for me is because I did not join you in the northern expedition. But I have loved you since I was a child. I could hardly bear to part with you. No matter how cruel and cool you are to me, I shall always love you."

"Love is not to be forced," I said. "You cannot force two people without love into a marriage, nor can you force apart two people who are in love. You are free to love me, and I also free not to love you. I cannot prevent you from loving me, just as you cannot persuade me to love you. For our future it is better that we end this marriage sensibly. You will marry your ideal wife, and she will help you to make a good home; and I shall marry my ideal lover and live happily. This will be best for both of us as individuals, and for the country too. Please do not be stubborn and ruin our future lives."

We talked the whole night. Some women were outside the door trying to hear us, but we spoke in a Changsha dialect which they were not able to understand.

There was no sleep the second night either, for we continued our discussion.

他的母親說他太癡，不應該整兩夜的談個不停。「她既然已經坐着花轎進了蕭家的門，她已生死是蕭家的人了。你是她的丈夫，何必更有什麼顧忌呢？她難道敢不服從嗎？只有死貓才會放過在他嘴邊經過的老鼠的。」

說句公平的話，蕭明實在是一個好人；他很能體諒別人。他深知我的性情，思想，和決心，他很知道如果用強硬手段，則這件事將更為棘手，更加難於解決。

但他說：「嗚呼！你爲什麼這般硬心腸？我不是強盜，也不是畜生，我決不會傷害你的。請你相信我吧！我必會很留意地保全你的名譽和你的前途。你難道竟不能對我表示些些的愛情嗎？不論這愛情是出於可憐我，或竟是假意的，或竟是暫時的，我都願意接受。」說着，他的眼淚已經掛下來，但我雖是心裏有些可憐他，然而我已打定了主意，決不被他的眼淚所動。

「愛情不能爲了憐憫而施與，也不能出於虛假。」我回說；「你可以算作我的一個好友，但我們二人的關係不能超過這種朋友的限度。我不能犧牲我的理想；我不能做你的太太。如果你企望有一個快樂的家庭，則你應趕緊結束目下這件事，另外去娶一位太太！」

他的眼淚滴得更厲害了。我把一方手帕授給他，他擦去眼淚之後，依舊還給了我。這是一幕悲劇，但我沒有把它變成喜劇的能力。

「倘若我們早把這次結合在事前取消，則目前就不至

His mother told him that he was foolish to spend the precious time just talking. "Since she has come to us in a red chair, she is a member of the Hsiao family, dead or alive. You are her husband. Do whatever you like. Does she dare to disobey? Only a dead cat will allow a mouse to pass by his mouth."

To be fair, Hsiaoming was a good man; he was not boorish and he did not insist. He understood my character, my thoughts, and my determination, knowing that the matter would become more serious and the solution still farther off were he to use force or threats.

But he said, "Ming, why are you so cruel? I am not a gangster or a beast, I won't eat you up or harm you! Believe me, I will carefully guard your reputation and your future. Can't you give me just a little love? I will accept it even if it comes out of pity for me, even if it should be pretended, even if it should be temporary!" Tears rolled down his face, but though I pitied him, I had resolved not to be moved by his tears.

"Love is not to be given away for pity's sake," I said. "Nor can it be a pretense. You will be my good friend, but I cannot possibly give you more than friendship. I cannot give up my ideals; I cannot be your wife. If you wish to have the happiness of a family life, please end this marriage as soon as possible and marry another woman!"

He shed more tears. I handed him a handkerchief, and after wiping away his tears he returned it to me. It was a tragedy and beyond my power to turn it into a comedy.

"If we had called off the wedding before," he agreed,

於如此的難堪了。」他說，「但現在婚禮已經行過，大家都已經知道。你的父親還沒有走。如果我們竟在此時離婚，叫我怎樣去見這些人呢？何況我的父母是決不會答應的。新媳婦剛剛娶進門，便逃跑了，這叫他們又怎樣有臉去見人呢？再則這也將損壞你父母和你自己的名譽的。我們豈不能作一次嘗試嗎？我們何妨一同試過下去，等到萬萬過不下去的時節，再作商量。」

我聽了這番話，心裏開始對他發生一種憎惡的意念。他所說的「家聲」和「顏面」無非是把握原已不很牢固的封建遺物罷了。我立刻打定主意不再和他作無謂的辯論。我暗想爲了要達到自己的目的，只好對他不起，用手腕來對付他了。因此我即回答：「很好，目前姑且丟開，待日後再說吧。」

第三天，父親已經預備動身，他早一得悉我們兩夜沒有睡覺，但他依舊假裝着不知道，走到我的房裏邊，向我說：

「你千萬不可再鬧什麼花樣了。你應該從此安份守己的過下去。明年我可以替你想法子，介紹你到大同的女學校裏邊去當教員。」

隨後又對蕭明說：「我曉得你的脾氣比她好，凡事不要和她一般見識。」

這一夜，我實在疲倦得耐不住了。我攤開了一床綠的棉被，和衣睡了，留出一床紅的棉被給蕭明。但我依舊很留心注意着他的舉動。不料他倒很體諒我，很尊重我的

"it would not have mattered so much. Now we have gone through the ceremony, and everyone is celebrating it. Your father is still here. If we have a divorce now, how am I going to face all these people? And my parents would never consent. How could they face other people after having a daughter-in-law who ran away right after the wedding? And it would injure your parents' name and your own. Let us give it a trial; let us live together until it really is impossible."

Hearing all this, I began to feel a certain intense dislike for him. The "prestige" and "face" he was talking about were the last gasps of that ancient system which he was trying to maintain. I decided all of a sudden not to argue any more. If I could reach my final goal, there was no harm playing a little politics. So I answered, "All right, let us leave it as it is for the present. We will find a way out."

On the third day, my father was leaving and, knowing that we had not slept for the last two days, yet pretending not to know, he came to my room and said:

"Don't create any more trouble. Live and be content. I shall arrange for you to teach in Tatung Girl's School next year."

Then he turned to Hsiaoming and said, "You know you have a better temper than she has. Yield a bit."

That night I could really stand it no longer. I laid out the green quilt and went to bed with my dress on, leaving the red quilts for Hsiaoming. I was as cautious as a detective watching his every movement. Somewhat to my surprise he was considerate and respected my freedom and there was no "violation." I was grateful to him,

自由，並沒有什麼粗暴的舉動。我很感激他，不過一方面以為是理應如此的。其實呢，他的溫柔另有一種用意。他知道我在此六個月中，因了三次逃奔的企圖，已受了不少的痛苦，因此，深怕逼迫過度或許會造成什麼悲慘的結果。

長沙接連來了兩封電報，催他回去。照他母親的意思，很想從此不讓他出門，但他也知道住在家裏邊無非是增加痛苦，他還希望離開了我之後，我或許會有一天自己去找他的，這真是可笑的夢想啊！但由這上面也可以知道他對於想挽回我的心是何等的努力。

在他動身那一天晚上，他向我說：「我尊重你的自由，我此次無非爲了家庭的壓迫，不能不回來做這一齣戲文。從此以後，你終可以自由行動，但我愛你之心始終不渝。」

我本想和他同去的，但他的母親恐怕我在半途逃走，不許我去，我知道這時節表示服從，以我較爲有利，因此我就決計住在家裏，在表面上做了一個孝順媳婦。

這時的家庭生活，不像我起初所想像的那麼容易。當他動身之前，他曾暗地關照他母親嚴密守視我的行動。這位老太太表面上是很仁慈的，但實際上比母親好不了多少，藉着爲了我寂寞的理由，僱了一個小大姊同我睡。有時，我翻來覆去的睡不着，想開門出去看看月光，才知道房門已被反鎖上了。於是我再度嘗到家庭監獄的滋味。

蕭家雖很有錢，但如同我的家裏一般，只僱着一個男僕，而並沒有女僕。所以一切家庭工作，都須我們親自動手。

though I thought he was doing only what he should. But his kindness had a purpose too. He knew that I had suffered much for the past six months because of my three attempts to escape, and that to force me against my wishes might result in a tragic ending.

Two telegrams came from Changsha, asking him to go back to his work in a highway company. His mother wanted never to let him go, but he knew that he would only suffer at home. Why not go away and let me go to him some day? This was his foolish dream, but it shows the trouble he took to win me over.

On the night of his departure, he told me, "I respect your freedom. I, too, am under the control of the family and was forced to come home to go through this comedy. Now you can go anywhere you like. But I shall always love you."

I wanted to go with him, but his mother would not permit it fearing I would run away on the journey. I knew that by yielding I could gain more, so I decided to stay at home, and be a filial daughter-in-law.

It was not as easy as I thought it would be. When he went, he made his mother responsible for watching me very closely. That old mistress looked very kind, but in fact she was no kinder than my mother. On the ground of comforting me in my loneliness, she hired a little maid to sleep with me. When I could not go to sleep and wanted to open the door and look at the moonlight, I found the door locked. I tasted again the experience of family imprisonment.

Even though the Hsiao were rich, they hired only one man servant and no maids, just as in my own family.

幸而我從小已經學會的，所以這時並不覺得怎樣的艱難。

我徹底改變了我的生活方式，極力模仿着鄉下人的樣子。我幫着餵飼豬和雞，掃地並揩抹桌椅；但只是不會生火。老太太並沒有罵過我。有時，她看見我在洗碗盥時，她還向我說：

「這件事是你在學堂裏沒有學過的。放下吧。你還是新娘子哩，你即使一件事也不做，旁人也不會批評你的。」

一個短短的星期很平順地過去了。媒人每天走來和老太太閒談，有時他很得意地故意大聲說：「我不是早已告訴過你嗎？一個姑娘在出嫁後自會變得柔順的。你看哪，這位新娘會讀書，會打仗，並且也會做家事。你不知前世在菩薩面前燒了多少香，方能娶到這樣一位好媳婦的。」

「這都是出於你之所賜，我真料想不到她竟會做家庭工作的。」老太太回說。

從此，我在蕭家獲得了很好的名譽，他們一家之中，老老小小都很喜歡我，都很信任我，已經消失了我或許會有過激舉動的恐懼。我的房門已不再反鎖了，小大姊也不再陪我同睡了。我知道我逃走的机会已經來到。

當我正在躊躇怎樣逃法時，我接到了父親給我的一封信，裏邊附着一封大同女學校校長請我去擔任第六級教員

Therefore, all the housework had to be done by ourselves. Luckily I had done housework when I was small, so I did not find it hard.

I changed my way of living completely and tried to learn the ways of country folk. I helped feed the pigs and the hens, sweep the floor, wipe the furniture; I failed only in building a fire, even after a few hard attempts. Old Mistress did not scold me. Sometimes when she saw me starting to wash the dishes, she would say:

"You never did this in school. Don't bother. You are still a bride, and no one will dare say anything even if you don't do a thing."

A short week passed peacefully. The go-between came to chat with the old mistress every day and she often raised her voice and said proudly, "I told you so. Brides always yield after they are married. Look, she knows how to read and how to fight, and can do housework besides. How much incense you must have burned before Buddha in your previous life that you get such a good daughter-in-law!"

"It is all due to you. We never thought that she could manage a household," the old mistress would say.

From then on I had a good reputation in the Hsiao family. From big to small, they all liked me and trusted me and lost the fear of my going to extremes. The door was not locked any more, and the little maid did not have to stay with me. I knew that now was my time to run away.

While I was worrying how to do it, a letter came from my father. It enclosed a letter from the principal of Tatung Girls' School asking me to go to teach the sixth

的聘書。這使我快活得連全身的毛孔裏邊都有了笑容。我立刻拿着這封信去告訴公婆。

「大間離這裏很近，我可以時常回來看望你們二老。我此後已有了每年二百四十塊錢的進益，我至少能夠省下一百三十塊錢，以供你們二老的救水。因此我特地來請示，可否准我前去。」

「怎麼說？」婆婆說，「蕭明會反對嗎？」

「他怎麼會反對呢？教書是一件高尚事情，而且又是在鳴岡的母校裏邊，今天她的父親特地差人送這封信來，我們怎麼可以反對呢？」公公却這樣說。

他倆毫不疑感地答應了我，這時我真想不出用什麼言詞謝謝他們。

這天是一個春天的早晨，天氣晴朗。我把行李剛收拾好時，有許多個兒童走來看我問我：「媽媽，你幾時回來啊！」玩皮的華球蓬着頭走過來，問了我一句我所不願意聽的話：「媽媽，你不會再逃跑，而必會回來的吧？」

「呆話！」我喊着：「我每月要回來兩次哩。」

婆婆沒有聽見我們對談的說話；她正忙着在那裏替我煮蔬菜，鷄子和青豆。

「婆婆，再會吧！」我在跨進轎子的時節向她說。我的語聲很柔和，我看見她用衣袖在那裏擦眼淚。

「可憐的老太太，你從此不會再見你的名義上的媳婦了！」我心裏說。我也有一些別離時的感慨，但五分鐘後

grade. I was so happy that every cell of my body was tense. I at once went to my parents-in-law and told them.

"It is very near home and I can come often to look after you two old people. I shall get \$240 a year and I can save at least \$120 a year and buy more food for you. So I come specially to ask you old people, if I may have your permission to go."

"What do you say?" said Old Mistress. "Will Hsiao-ming object?"

"How can he?" said my father-in-law. "Teaching is a good thing. It is Mingkang's mother school, and today her father sent a man specially to deliver the letter. How can we object?"

They consented without suspicion. I did not know what words to use to thank them.

It was a bright spring morning when I finished packing. The children came and looked at me with their bright eyes, and asked, "Auntie, when are you coming back?" Naughty Hsiao-ming came with her hair uncombed and said something I did not like: "Auntie, you wouldn't run away and not come back, would you?"

"Silly!" I cried. "I'll come back twice a month."

Old Mistress did not hear us; she was busy cooking eggs and frying peas for me to eat on the way.

"Good-by, Mother!" I said as I jumped into the sedan chair, using my kindest voice. I saw her wiping her eyes with sleeves.

"Poor Old Mistress, you will never see your nominal daughter-in-law again!" I thought. I felt the sorrow of departure a little, but in five minutes I had the smile of bright hope

，我的臉上又佈滿了希望的笑容了。

最後一次的逃奔終於得着了勝利，那時我一點也不慌張，在翠柳依依的堤岸上散步似的慢慢的走着，嘴裏輕輕地哼着沒有韻的調子：

永別了我的故鄉！

美麗的故鄉呵，

有翠綠的青山，

有潺潺的流水，

杏桃如畫，

垂柳如絲。

美麗的故鄉呵，

曾陶醉了我幼時的心靈，

葬送了我寶貴的青春。

到現在，只剩得心坎上的血痕深深！

封建社會的猛虎，

想要吞沒這顆黑暗中的明星。

奮鬥呀！

只有奮鬥才能得到最後的成功！

永別了我的故鄉！

on my face.

This last escape was successful. I was not afraid at all this time, and as I went leisurely along the river bank under the willow trees, I hummed a tune I made,

Good-by my native village!

My lovely village

With your green mountains

And gurgling brooks,

With prune and peach trees like a
painting

And drooping willows like silken threads—

My village,

That once shook my soul

And buried the gift of my youth,

But now leaves in my heart only a bloody
stain.

The monster shadow of feudal society

Would devour the flickering star

And envelop all in darkness,

But rebellion undaunted will triumph.

Good-by forever, my ancient village!

第六章

飄流

好像有上帝故意在捉弄我，要我嘗盡人間的苦味，剛剛從家庭的監獄逃了出來，如今却又踏進了真的監獄之門了。

爲了被關在籠子裏的翔，要我寄幾本可看的書給她，以消遣那些漫長的苦痛的日子，我拿着一包已封好的書，直向郵局走去，突然前面來了一個很面熟的青年。

「嗚，那裏去？」

他是艾斯，一個武漢時代的伙伴。我們就站在人車擁擠的八角亭談起話來，他告訴我和他同來的還有莫林，現在住新安棧。他極希望我去談話，要我同他一起到客棧裏，就這樣我夾着書走去了。

這簡直是在做夢似的，我們被捕了。

我和莫林，艾斯三個人被鐵鍊鎖着送到警備司令部去，路上擠滿了看熱鬧的人，孩子們竟唱着「的打打，的打打，的的的——殺殺」的聲音；一個老太婆嘆息着說：「又是一個年紀輕輕的女孩。」

我們被鎖在監牢裏了。這是小小的二間，他們二人同在一房，我被送到一間又臭又黑比他們小一倍的房子裏，「洞」的一聲，笨重的鎖落上了。

晚上七點鐘的時候，好幾個持了手槍的警兵走了進來，看守開了鎖，領我到法官那裏去審問。

法官是一個年約四十多歲的人，有一口日本人的八字

CHAPTER VI

WANDERING

ALMOST AS SOON AS I HAD ESCAPED FROM the family prison I got into a real prison. It seemed as though God was playing a trick on me, wanting me to taste the bitter cup of life to the full.

I was buying a few books for Hsiang, who was still confirmed at home and needed books to help her pass the long days. I had the package ready and was walking to the postoffice when suddenly a young man stopped me.

"Ming, where are you going?"

He was Aisze, an old comrade-in-arms at Wuhan. We stood in a roadside pavilion and talked. He told me that he was living with Molin now in the Hsin-an Hotel. He wanted very much to talk to me and persuaded me to go with him to the hotel, with the books under my arm.

It came like a nightmare! We were arrested!

Aisze, Molin, and myself were taken to the police station in chains. The crowds in the street gathered to watch us, the children imitating the sounds of the bugle and gun fire, crying, "Ti, ta, ta-ti, ta, ta—shoot!" An old woman sighed and said, "There goes another young girl!"

We were thrown into prison, Aisze and Molin in a room, and I in a dark, smelly cell half the size. With a clang the heavy lock was fastened.

It was ten o'clock at night when several guards armed with guns came, and the jailer unlocked the door and they took me to the judge.

The judge was a man about forty, with a Japanese

鬍子、看樣子像忠厚，可是理智告訴我，忠厚的人就不會當法官。

他問了我的姓名，年齡，職業，籍貫後，就問：「你是什麼時候加入共產黨的？你們的機關在那裏？你擔任什麼工作？」

「什麼？你的話我完全不懂？我是一個師範生。」

他聽了我的回答，狡滑地哼了一聲：「你沒有加入嗎？爲什麼有這些赤化書？」

「書是書局裏買來的，難道賣書的也是共產黨嗎？」

「趕快認出來，立刻就釋放你，否則明天就會槍斃的。」

「橫豎這時候我的生命掌握在你的手裏，你要槍斃，有什麼辦法呢？」我乾脆地回答。

「你不犯法，誰敢亂殺你。」

「我並沒有犯法！」

「證據真確，還敢抵賴嗎？打！」

粗大的木棍落在我的腿上，我撲倒在地上。

「你究竟招不招，否則就灌辣椒水。」

我知道這是一種極殘酷刑罰，用紅辣椒末放在開水裏，從鼻孔裏灌進去，使受刑者痛得七孔流血，非到你招認出來不停止。很多不是政治犯的青年，被他們抓去拷問，爲了怕痛就故意首先承認共產黨，結果冤枉地犧牲了生命。

mustache. He was apparently a good man, but reason told me that honest men could not be judges!

After he had asked my name, my age, my profession, and my native town, he asked, "When did you join the Communist Committee? Where is your office? What kind of work are you assigned to?"

"I do not understand what you are talking about. I am only a student."

He heard my reply and snorted through his nose. "Why do you have communist books if you are not on the committee?"

"The books? I got them from the book shop. Do you call the bookseller a communist, too?"

"Confess quickly and we will set you free. If not, you will be shot tomorrow."

"My life is in your hands anyhow. Shoot me if you want to. I can do nothing about it, can I?" I answered dryly.

"Who would kill you if you did not commit any crime?"

"But I did not commit any crime!"

"There is the proof. How can you deny it? Flog her!"

A blow from a heavy stick struck my legs, and I fell. "If you don't confess, we will pour pepper water."

I had heard of this cruel torture. Red-pepper powder was put into boiling water and poured into the nose. The victim would bleed from his nose, mouth and ears; and they would not stop until he confessed. Many youths who were not political prisoners said they were communists rather than face this torture, and thus courted

（趕快說，用不着考慮，難道你真要受刑嗎？）

「我什麼都不知道，你要我從那裏招起？」

那位書記在簿上寫了些什麼，法官說了一聲：「帶她回去，等下再給她苦吃！」

當我經過他們的牢房時，莫林連忙將頭靠近鐵門問我：「你做了些什麼？」我正想回答時，槍柄已落在我肩

上。他們是兩次分開了的；不知道有句什麼話，兩人的口供不一樣，於是事情就變得嚴重了。看守和一個查夜的在談論關於他們的事：「法官說，他們中間有一個重要分子，明早就要槍斃。」

這是第四次的審問了。據說因為我們的供辭太弱，又在艾斯的箱子裏抄出來一些有反動嫌疑的信件，三個人又是南腔北調，各人說着一口家鄉話，因此他們一口說我們是反動份子，應該處以極刑的。

法官詳細的問起我的家庭狀況。當我說出父親的名字時，他大大的吃了一驚；原來他在父親那裏讀過了四年書，我們的生命就在這一線意外的曙光中得救了。

他寫封信給住在北門外的大哥，而且飭一個勤務兵送去。第二天早上三點多鐘的時候，大哥和他的岳丈陸先生倉皇地跑到獄中來了。大哥自然板起了面孔，大罵了一頓，陸老先生却慈祥地安慰我說：「不要着急，無論如何，我們要救你出來的。」

their own deaths.

"Hurry up and talk. Do you want to be tortured?"
"I don't know anything. What do you want me to confess?"

The clerk wrote something in his book and the judge said, "Take her back. I will make her suffer later!"

When I passed the cell of my two friends, Molin put his head near the door and asked, "Did you say anything?" A rifle butt descended on my shoulder before I could answer.

Molin and Aisze were taken separately to the judge, and the matter became more serious, for on a certain point their confessions were at variance. The jailer told the night watchman, "The judge said one of them is going to be shot in the morning."

I was brought to the court for the fourth time. Because we held stubbornly to our story and some incriminating papers had been found in Aiz's possession, and, to add to the confusion, because we talked different dialects, we were accused of being rebels and were to be executed.

The judge then inquired about my family connections. He was greatly amazed when I mentioned my father's name, for he had studied four years under my father. This single piece of information changed the whole picture, and our lives were saved.

The judge wrote a letter to Elder Brother, who was living outside the North Gate, and sent it by a guard. At three o'clock in the morning Elder Brother and his father-in-law came to the jail. Elder Brother made a long face and raved at me, but Mr. Kung comforted me kindly: "Don't worry. We'll get you out somehow."

「還有兩個朋友呢。」但大哥帶着譏諷的口吻說：「既來這裏，就安心一點吧，鐵窗生活的滋味，是不容易嘗到的。」

他們進去會法官去了，我叫艾斯莫林不要難過：「我們有得救的希望了！」

「法官是你父親的學生，你自然有希望，只是我們，恐怕……」艾斯淒然地說。

「死就死，有什麼關係呢？」莫林有些不高興他的傷感。

兩個鐘頭以後，大哥又來了，他告訴我，現在只要找到殷實的舖保就可以釋放了。

「還有他們兩個呢？」我迫切地問。

「那就知道了，我又不認識他們，我怎樣冒昧替他們說話？」

這幾句話他故意說得很大，有意使他們聽到。

「不！如果釋放我一個人，我一定陪他們坐牢。」我說。

「爲什麼？」

「他們是因了我那幾本書而被捕的，實際上是我連累他們，爲什麼我能夠釋放，而他們不能呢？」

我知道這理由是正大光明的，而且大哥爲了我，他們不能不管他們；法官呢，他既然是我父親的學生，當然也不好把我怎樣，還好，恰在這時，艾斯的朋友也得到了消息來保釋他們了。

第四天，三個人都得到了自由。在獄中三天，每人僅僅吃了一碗麵，花去二塊錢，這麵的滋味，比海參魚翅還鮮美。

"I have two friends with me, too." But Elder Brother said sarcastically, "Since you are here, rest a while. This life behind prison bars can be tasted only on rare occasions."

They went in to see the judge. I told Aisze and Molin not to be downhearted. "There is hope for us," I said.

"Of course there is hope for you because the judge was your father's student. But we, perhaps . . ." said Aisze in a tone of despair.

Molin was displeased with his friend. "I'll die if I have to. What does it matter?"

Two hours later Elder Brother came back, telling me that I would be set free if a good guarantor could be found.

"How about the other two?" I urged.

"That I don't know. How could I say things for them, since I don't even know them?"

This he said especially loudly for them to hear.

"I won't leave this place if they can't," I said.

"But why?"

"They were arrested because of the few books in my possession. It was I who got them into trouble. If I can be set free, why can't they?"

I knew I had a good argument. Elder Brother could not disregard my friends because of me, and the judge, being my father's student, would not dare allow anything to happen to me. It happened, too, that a friend of Aisze got the news and came to help release them.

We were freed on the fourth day. During the three days in prison each of us had only a bowl of noodles, which cost us two dollars; but the taste of this bowl of noodles was better than shark's fins or any delicate food.

自從獄中出來之後，便沒有機會再看到他們了，後來我聽說他們走的時候非常狼狽淒涼，而且又決心我要該家裏趕回去了。

小學教員

「好了，現在機會來了，張先生是省立第五中學的校長，他要找個附小的國文教師，我已將你介紹給他，他因為是父親的學生，所以很願意幫助你，明天你就收拾行李和他一同去衡陽好了。」大哥對我說。

我聽了這話是多麼快樂呀！

我一來是爲了要獨立生活，二來也是一時逼着沒有路可走，才去當教書匠，過那可憐的粉筆生涯。不過我並不難過，因為我已得到了用金錢買不到的教訓和經驗。

起初校長介紹我和那位小學部的主事認識時，我便看出了他對我的印象不好，因為他想不到張先生會請一個年紀輕輕的女先生來，本來社會一般人的心裏，都以為年輕人是只會搗亂的，自然他也不能例外。

我的寢室就在教室的隔壁，這是六年二期和五年二期的合級教室，正是我教的那班。一夜沒有好睡，我只是害怕着明天的到來。雖然孩子們是我所最愛的，但這時我已完全忘記他們了，我只是自問着爲什麼我不能像別人一樣去升學，而來這裏吃粉筆灰？「有什麼能力和資格做孩子們的老師呢？」我又自己懷疑起自己來了。

可怕的日子終於到來了，校長先生就告訴我這次我担

I had no opportunity to see the others after we left the prison. I learned later that they went away miserable, worried lest I should be taken home again.

Schoolteaching

"Here is a chance," said Elder Brother. "Mr. Chang, principal of the Fifth Provincial Middle School, needs a Chinese teacher for the primary school attached to it. I will introduce you to him; he is very willing to help because he too was once Father's student. Pack your suitcases and go with him to Hengyang tomorrow."

How happy I was to hear these words!

I took up teaching first because I wanted an independent life, and, second, because there was no other course open to me. Thus it was that I came to be a teacher and to lead the "chalk-and-blackboard life." I do not regret it, because through it I received a lesson that money could not buy.

At my introduction to the principal of the primary school, I could see he was not gaining a good impression of me. He did not expect a young woman teacher, for he thought, as society thought, that all young people could do was to upset everything they laid their hands upon.

My bedroom was next to the classroom of the fifth and sixth grades which I was going to teach. I did not sleep well that night, for I was worried about the next day. I love children, but at this moment I had completely forgotten about them. I was asking myself why I could not continue my education like others, why I had to come here to eat chalk dust. Moreover, I was doubtful of myself. "Am I competent to be the teacher of children?"

The dreaded morning finally came. The principal had

任的是教任，每天舉行朝會時一定要到場訓話，監督學生。遇到我值日的那天，更要負責早晚點名，查寢室，教室，寫教務日誌，而且那天整天不能離開辦公室，學生之間，如發生糾紛，他們需要什麼，都要我來解決的。我很留心地聽着他的話，但心裏却在想，這事情太麻煩了，我不能過這種生活，但有什麼法子可以逃避呢？

開朝會時，我像木偶一般站在操場上，叫子已經吹了，孩子們一個個都在傾聽那位值日教員的報告，但是奇怪，突然他們的小眼睛都緊緊地釘住了我！這使我頓時感到難為情起來，臉部像火燒着一般，於是我掉轉頭望到別的地方去。不對，校長要我行朝會時監督學生的，於是我又回過頭來。

呀！更可怕了，三百多雙眼睛通在注視着我，而且連我的頭髮有多少根，他們好像都數清了。

又是一聲叫子吹，整齊的步伐開始回到教室裏去，我盲目地跟着了五六年級的學生，走進了教室。踏上講台，我的臉就紅了，這是我感覺到的，因為我燒得厲害。

「同學們，我是初從師範出來的大孩子，其實我並沒有畢業，因為去當兵，還差一年，就犧牲那張討飯吃的文憑了。以我的年齡來說，實在不配做你們的先生，不過我可以做你們一個很忠實的朋友，有什麼不知道的事情，我

told me that my job was to be a class adviser; I had to go to the morning meeting and talk to the students. And when it was my day, I had to call the roll, go round, and inspect the bedrooms, the classrooms, and write the day's report. I was not supposed to leave the office on that day. If quarrels came up between the students, I was to settle them. I listened attentively, thinking in my heart that the work would be well-nigh unbearable. But I had no choice.

At the assembly I stood like a statue as on the drill ground. When the whistle blew, the children listened to the report of the teacher in charge of the day, but their little eyes were fixed on me! I got stage fright and my face was burning, so that I turned my eyes away. No, that is wrong, I thought. The principal asked me to watch the students during the meeting. I turned my head back.

What a terrible feeling to have three hundred pairs of eyes focused on me! They seemed to be counting the hairs on my head.

The whistle blew again, and the students began to file back to their classrooms. Mechanically I followed the students of the fifth and sixth grades into their classroom and went up to the teacher's desk. I knew my face was red, because it was burning inside. Then I spoke to them:

"Fellow students, I am just a big girl, older than you, freshly graduated from the normal school. In fact I did not graduate, because I went to join the army for one year. So I do not possess a diploma which is necessary when asking for a job. I am not qualified to be your teacher, because of my youth, but I can be your friend,

們大家共同研究，共同討論，因此我希望你們都以同學待我，不要當我做先生。」

我這樣誠懇地說了之後，孩子們都望着我微笑。從這時起，我便做了孩子的老師，做了生活的奴隸了！窮困的鎖鍊就緊緊地纏住了我！

還好，雖然教書剝奪了我讀書的時間，可是精神上得到了另一種安慰。孩子們的一舉一動，都是可愛的，天真的，他們的心是多麼純潔而坦白呵！

不幸的事發生了，那是我到學校的第三個月。原來全校的教員，原本都是男的，只有我是女的，而又特別年輕，教的又是高年級，自然有點令他們不服，特別是那位主事先生。

一天晚上，那位主事來到我的房間裏，本來我想下逐客令的，但他已經坐在凳子上了。

「黃先生，有何貴幹？」我這樣堆滿着勉強的笑容問他。

「沒有什麼，隨便談談。」

「對不起，我這裏是不招待男賓的。」

「哈哈！那麼，我就走吧。」虧他還能夠張開嘴笑。「先生學問高深，教授法又很好，學生得益很多，只是自己犧牲太大了！」

我故意像傻子似的，假裝不懂。「犧牲？一點也沒有！何況我得到了工作的代價，即使沒有，為社會盡義務，也是應該的！」

If you have anything that you do not understand, let us study and discuss it together. I wish you would treat me as a fellow student and not a teacher."

The children were smiling at me when I finished. From that moment on I became a teacher and a slave of society. Poverty bound me like a chain.

Teaching took away all my time for reading, but I had my reward, for I enjoyed everything the children did or said—their naivete, their innocence, and their unspoiled charm.

An unfortunate thing happened in the third month of my teaching. The faculty of the school had originally been made up only of men. I was the only woman teacher and the youngest among those teaching the upper grades. They were naturally a little jealous, especially the head of the primary school.

One night the primary head came to my room. He was already seated on the stool before I had time to stop him.

"Mr. Huang, what is your honorable business?" I said with a forced smile.

"Nothing special. I'm just dropping in for a talk."

"I am sorry, but I do not receive men guests in my room."

"Ha, ha! All right. I'll go then." He was able to affect a smile. "You are very well-read and your method of teaching is wonderful. You have done a lot of good to the students. But you are sacrificing yourself too much!"

I pretended not to understand. "Sacrifice? Not a bit. I get pay for my work. Besides, I ought to be glad to be of some service to society!"

「好說，好說，像先生這樣少年英俊的人，正好深造，前途真未可限量！」

他在繞着灣子說話。但是我都直截了當地告訴他：「是的，本來我要去升學，只因為張先生「垂青」，一定找我來貴校教課，情在世交，不能拒絕，只好受命，不過暑期一到，我就要走的，謝謝先生的關心！」

話是有點酸溜溜的味道，但我的心却輕了許多。

他走後，我又去校長那裏閒談了很久，原來主事的一位親戚正待解決飯碗問題，因此他希望我快些走；而我也實在忍受不住了。爲了窒人的空氣太使我不能呼吸，爲了我不會和用手段的搶飯碗的人鬥爭，爲了我可憐那位比我更可憐的人，我決心走了！

我在離我教的那班學生畢業前的十天，我靜悄悄地走了，可是，奇怪：他們都知道，一個個跑來送行。

「後會有期，祝你們努力！」我也眼睛紅了，說不出更多的話，最後便深深地望了他們一眼，便踏上了旅途。

還有一個月的薪還水沒有拿到，我身邊只帶着二十元紙洋，就這樣匆匆地離開了衡陽。

一雙腳剛剛踏進社會之門，就受到一個這麼大的打擊，我明白了社會的黑暗，人心的可怕！呵，虛偽，笑裏藏刀的虛偽，是多麼的可怕呵！由於這次的事，使我深深地

"Well said, well said! But there is an unlimited future for a person as talented as you are!"

I knew he was groping about for what he really had in mind, but I interrupted again, "Yes, I wanted to continue my education, but for friendship's sake, I could not refuse Mr. Chang's invitation to teach in your honorable school. As soon as the term is over I shall be going. Thank you for your interest in my future!"

I said this in a sarcastic tone and felt much better.

After he went away, I went to see Mr. Chang and learned that Mr. Huang had a relative waiting for the job, and wanted me to leave as soon as possible. On my part I could not endure it any longer. I could not breathe in that suffocating atmosphere. As I had no patience to fight with others for my job, and rather pitied the one who was waiting for it, I decided to leave.

Ten days before the graduation of my class, I went away quietly. But the students had learned of it and came one by one to say good-by.

"We will meet each other later," I told them. "I hope you will all work hard. . . ." My eyes were red and I could not say more. I looked at them for the last time and went on my way.

There was still a month's salary due me which I did not get. I had twenty dollars with me when I left Hengyang.

This blow which I received on the threshold of life made me realize the wickedness of society and of the human heart. Pretense, hypocrisy, "the knife behind a smile!" From this incident, I began to realize that a girl could not stand on her own against the old forces of Chinese

了解在舊勢力籠罩着的中國社會，女子是不能立足的！這是給我的好教訓，不論在我的前面有多少磨難和痛苦，我不能逃避現實去過隱居的生活，我更不能投降在舊勢力之下！去吧，地球是這麼大，只要我能奮鬥，什麼地方沒有我的出路呢？



society. It was a very good lesson for me. However much trial and suffering lay ahead, I would not escape from society to live the life of a hermit, nor would I surrender to the old forces. Surely in this wide world there should be a way out for me! Forward I must go!



第七章 饑餓與戀愛

孫伏園勸我進大學去唸書。這時他正擔任着「現代月刊」的編輯。學校裏經他去說項之後，特許我減繳學費，他並願意替我代付膳宿費。

我這時渴望能去唸書，但又不願意旁人擔負我的學費，我寧可先找些工作做做，待積下一些錢之後，再去唸書，我懇求伏園薦我到工廠裏去當女工，但他回報我：「工廠裏邊的人一個也不認識。」

「那末不拘什麼地方我都肯去工作的。卽如倒垃圾或揩地板我也能做。」

「那末就在我這裏做工吧！夜裏你還可以寫作一些文字。哈哈，一個摩登的丫頭！」

他還以爲我是在說笑話，所以他也笑了一番，依舊低着頭去寫他的東西。

我因爲找不到工作，心裏很氣悶，幸而錢先生介紹我到文藝學校裏去。他說：「這學校裏邊的主任和許多教員都是革命分子。你以一個女兵的資格，可以補一個免費學額，你可以抽空寫幾篇文章，賣出錢來付你的膳宿和書籍費。」於是我就大膽地入了文科的二年級。

宿舍裏邊，我們那間房是預備八個人住的，但因爲尚在假期之內，所以只有我一個人住在裏邊。

在這間乾淨，光亮，滿晒着太陽的臥室裏邊，我對於生活幾乎已感到十分滿意。在我想到以前的家庭監獄時，我還不禁要寒慄。我這時好像是在夢中，時刻懷疑着母親

CHAPTER VII

HUNGER AND LOVE

MR. SUN FUYUAN ENCOURAGED ME TO GO TO college. He was then the editor of the Modern Monthly. He made special arrangements with the college to enable me to pay less tuition, and said he would pay for my board.

I was most anxious to study, but I could not let other people pay for me. I was willing to work for wages, and study when I could save enough to afford it. I pleaded with Fuyuan to introduce me to the manager of a factory, but he said: "I don't know anyone in the factories."

"Then I will work anywhere," I said. "I could empty waste baskets or scrub floors."

"Then work here! And at night you could still write a little. Ha-ha! A modern bond-maid!"

He thought I was joking and laughed and turned back to his writing.

I felt sad because I couldn't find work, but luckily Mr. Chien introduced me to the School of Arts. He said: "The heads of this school and many of the teachers are revolutionists. You, as a girl soldier, can be taken in on a scholarship and you can sell some articles to pay for your board and books." So I boldly enrolled in the second year of the Chinese department.

My room in the dormitory was for eight persons, but because the school was still on vacation I was alone there.

In that clean, bright, sunny room I was almost satisfied with life. When I thought of the family prison, I would still shiver. It was as if I were dreaming, wondering when

不知道會不會走來逼我重新回到家裏去。

我開始和貧窮搏鬥。在起初的兩天中，我一共只吃了四個燒餅，但是夜裏邊，我倒有着盡量讀書的機會。

第三天的晚上，我正靠在床上讀一本革命文學，忽然有一個穿黑衣服的女子走了進來，說是校長的太太命她住到我這間房裏來的。她的相貌長得很好，不過臉上血色不足，在燈光底下看去，正好似一個蠟像。她戴着黑框的眼鏡，身上的衣服很摩登。

她的名字叫做曼曼，她告訴我她一生的經過說：「我的父親和哥哥都在杭州做大官，家裏的生活很舒服。我進了高中後，就加入革命工作。當民國十五年國民革命時，我任着杭州婦女協會的會長。政局變更之後，他們擬把我驅逐，因此我就事先走避出來。我從小就由父母許配給一個官家子弟，未婚夫是一個纨绔，所以我決計要解除這個婚約。

「我逃奔了，打定主意不再回杭州。幸而那年的革命居然成功，否則我也許就解除不了那個婚約的。」

我聽她講述過去的經歷，正和乎同情相憐，覺得她正是我的同志，所以喜極了，抱住了她。從此我們便成爲密友。

一星期很快樂地過去了，校裏又來了三個帶着四川口音的女子，她們的衣飾，看了令人搖頭。所穿的旗袍異常狹小，還滾上綠色的鑲邊，十分土氣；她們的臉上，每人至小搽上四兩的花粉和胭脂，腳上所穿的皮鞋，鞋跟至少有三寸高。她們一走進來之後，便要我們搬到後面的房裏

Mother would come and make me go home again.

I began my struggle with poverty. For two days I ate only four very small hot cakes. But at night I could read all I wanted.

On the evening of the third day, as I lay in bed reading a book on revolution, there suddenly came in a girl clad in black, sent by the principal's wife. Her face was beautiful, but pale, and under the lamplight it looked as if she was made of wax. She wore black-rimmed glasses. Her dress showed that she was a modern girl.

Her name was Manman. She told me of her life: "My father and brother had all been officials in Hangchow and we lived lavishly. When I entered high school I joined the revolutionary work. In 1926 during the Nationalist Revolution I was the head of the Hangchow Women's Association. When the government changed they wanted to expel me and I escaped. In my childhood I was engaged by my parents, to the son of a high official. He knew only how to play, and I decided to break the engagement.

"When I escaped, I planned never to return to Hangchow. If the revolution had not been successful I should not have been able to break my engagement."

When I learned that she had gone through the same experience as mine, I was so happy that I hugged her. We became great friends.

After a happy week, there came three girls with Szechuen accent. The way they were dressed made people shake their heads. Their tight red gowns, trimmed with light green, were very provincial; on their faces each had at least four ounces of powder and rouge and the heels of their shoes were three inches high. The moment they came

去，把這間大房間讓給她們住。曼曼和我都不願意，但是校長太太袒護着她們，因此我們不能不讓了，便勉強搬到後面那間狹小而又黑暗的房間裏去，以求彼此安逸。

學校開學了，我們五個人坐在同桌吃飯。我和她們時常發生口角。她們從來不到課堂裏去上課，每天只是穿着鮮豔的衣服，在校場上開走，或去看電影。逢着天雨，她們便開起留聲機，在房間裏跳舞。吃飯的時節，她們從不知道等待我們下課同吃，她們自管先吃，等到我們去吃時，差不多已經碗碗都空，只剩下一些冷湯和冷飯了。這使曼曼非常氣憤，曾當面罵她們是強盜。

有一天我坐在洋台上面，聽到她們談論着我，聽見她們當中的一個說：「她窮得連一件好好的衣服都沒有，又何必到學校裏來唸書，還不如去做叫化吧！她這般的骯髒，怎樣可以同我們坐在一桌上吃飯呢？」

我聽了也不禁勃然發怒，但是曼曼勸我不必和她們計較。從此之後，我們便改在臥室裏邊吃飯。

以下，我遇到了一件為時雖很短促，但也是很令人不快的事情。

艾斯，莫林，和齊都是我在民十五軍事學校裏邊的同學，因為大家都愛好文學，所以成爲好友。三人之中，艾斯的年齡最大，齊最小。莫林最和氣，他常常寫幾篇文章發表，常被推爲各種集會的主席。艾斯所研究的是神話故事，他有着許多青年的朋友。齊是一個詩人，他很少說話，態度很莊重，常現着抑鬱的神色。

they wanted us to move into the back room, and let them have the big room. Manman and I were unwilling, but the principal's wife took their side and we knew that we must live in peace with them, so we moved into a narrow, low room with very poor light.

When the school reopened, all five of us ate together at one table. We often quarreled. They never went to classes, and every day they would stroll around the school, dressed in these bright colors, or would go to the movies. When it rained they would turn on the gramophone and dance. When meals were ready, they never waited for us to come from our classes but ate all the good dishes so that when we came only some cold rice and cold soup would be left. That made Manman so angry that she asked them if they were thieves.

One day as I sat on the balcony, I heard their sharp voices saying about me: "If she is so poor that she cannot afford to dress, she should not come to college but be a beggar! She is so dirty she ought never to eat with us."

It was my turn to be angry, but Manman told me not to pay any attention to them. From then on our little bedroom became our dining room too.

Now I took part in a short, sad episode.

Aisze, Molin, and Chi had all been my schoolmates in the military school back in 1926 and we became good friends because we were all interested in literature. Aisze was the eldest and Chi the youngest. Molin was the most social minded; he wrote essays and he was often made the chairman of meetings. Aisze was studying fairy tales and had many young friends. Chi was a young poet; he talked little and was serious and melancholy.

三人和我都很勤奮，我也把他們都當作弟兄一般。記得有一次我們談到各人的前途時，我說：『待北伐成功之後，我們應當打定主意不嫁不娶，組成一個兄弟姊妹的大家庭，平時大家分頭工作，到了星期日則齊集在一處歡聚一天。』這呢，也不過是我們當時的一種痴想，自然是不會實現的。

自從離校之後，我們各奔前程。在我被母親所監禁時，艾斯曾冒着危險來探望過我一次。後來，我們又在長沙因事一同入獄，這次連莫林也在其內。三人之中艾斯追求我最熱烈。齊也常和我通信，不過我以為他起初並不會對我發生什麼愛情。他在軍隊中的時節，曾做了許多首極好的詩給我，並把他的一本日記寄給我看。他不論走到那裏，看見花草時，必採一片葉子或一瓣花，附在信裏邊寄給我。他的日記本子，所寫的字小如芝麻，但寫得很為端正。

現在，齊差不多每天必來看望我，這時我真想不到日後我會使他感到十分的憂苦。他的情緒太高了——不，他始終相信『愛情高於一切』的假說，他好像已經到了沒有愛情便不能生活的地步，但是我則一心專注於學問和社會工作。我已立誓不陷入情網，因為我還有工作要做。不過理智是理智，而情感又另是一件事情，我竟和齊相戀了。

齊對我表示非常熱烈的愛情，不過他始終沒有向我問過：『你可愛我嗎？』那句話。他的家裏很窮，他的父親早故，他現在須贍養四口人。他很肯耐勞苦，這是我所很欽

They all liked me and I treated them all like brothers. Once when we were talking about the future I had said: "After the victory of the Northern Expedition, let us all refuse to marry. We will form a big family of brothers and sisters. During week days we will each have our work to do and during weekends we can be together." That was our foolish ideal and of course it could never materialize.

After leaving school we had each gone our own way. When I was imprisoned by my mother, Aisze came to my village to see me at some risk. Later in Changsha we had been in jail together, with Molin. Aisze was the one who pursued me most vigorously. Chi had corresponded with me often, but for a long time I did not think that he was in love with me. When he was in the army, he had written many beautiful poems to me, and he kept a diary and sent it to me. Wherever he went, he would pick a leaf or a flower and put it in his letter to me. The handwriting in his diary was as small as sesame seeds, but it was clear and neat.

Now Chi suddenly began to come to see me almost every day. How could I know that one day I would make him so unhappy? He was too passionate—no, he believed in the theory "love above all things." It seemed as if he could not live without love, but I was too absorbed in learning and in social work. I vowed not to fall into a love trap, because I wanted to work. But reason is one thing and emotion is another. I fell in love with Chi.

He poured out his passionate love to me, though he never asked me, "Do you love me?" His family was in poverty. His father had died early and he had to support

佩的，可惜我也無力幫助他。他的詩已打動了我的心。艾斯一向和他住在一起，自從得知我和齊已經相戀之後，他非常痛恨。有一天清晨，我去探望齊，艾斯也在那裏，他始終默不作聲，怒目注視着我們。我覺得情形不對，便離開他們，想回學校。不料艾斯竟從後面追上來，拉住了我的手臂，憤憤地問我：

「你爲什麼愛上了齊？你當然知道這是不能的！如果你背棄了我，哼！我定要殺死你。我愛你已經這麼長久，不料你竟會變心的。看你怎能逃過我的手掌……。」

以下的話我簡直聽都不要聽。愛情是不能製造的，也是不能威迫人放棄的；一個人都可以自由愛其所愛，無論那個沒有干涉的權利。我知道他的內心確已受了創痛，但這是他自找的，他不能以這個爲理由而像一個瘋子一般來和我糾纏。這時，有一輛黃包車走過，我便跳上去，叫拉車的快走。但艾斯竟拉住車子，怒目看着我，好似要把我吞下去一般。「你沒有給我一個明白的答覆，我決不讓你走。」他大聲說。

「答覆什麼？」

「我要你起個誓。從此你只愛我。不再愛齊！」

「哼！什麼人都不愛。我只愛我自己！」我說。

這是所能安慰他的惟一句話。他十分失望地放了手，眼裏我所坐的車子向學校拉去。

我非常煩惱，深怕艾斯或會做出極端的舉動如：殺人或自殺之類的可怕事情。我決計放棄齊，勸他離開上海，

four persons. He was willing to suffer and I liked that and felt that I could help him. But I was also drunk with his beautiful poems. Aisze, who was living with him, was bitter when he learned that I loved Chi. One morning I went to visit Chi. Aisze was there, and he kept completely silent and only stared at us. Sensing the situation I left soon and started back to school. Aisze ran after me and grasped my arm and asked angrily:

"Why do you love Chi? You know it is impossible! If you desert me now, I will kill you! I have loved you until it has come to this, and you cannot run away from me....!"

I paid no attention to what he said after that. Love cannot be created or snatched away by threats; one loves whomever one loves and nobody has the right to interfere. I knew that he was deeply hurt, but that was no excuse for coming after me like a madman. A rickshaw came along and I jumped into it and asked the driver to hurry. But Aisze checked the rickshaw and looked at me as if he could swallow me. "Until you give me a reply, I won't let you go!" he scolded.

"What reply?"

"I want you to swear that you love me and don't love Chi!"

"I don't love anyone. I love myself!" I said.

That was all I could say to comfort him. He stood in great disappointment watching my rickshaw take me through the gate of the college.

I was distracted and afraid that Aisze would go to extremes, to murder or suicide, horrible and unnecessary. I resolved to give up Chi, though against my will, and to

雖然我心裏是不願意的。從此之後，我將專心讀書，但一方面依舊保持着和艾斯的友誼。我不願意使他不快樂，但也不願意鼓勵他對我的愛情。

傍晚的時節，齊竟像事先已經約好的來到我的臥室裏邊。我便把早晨艾斯攔住車子那件事，和我的打算告訴了他。他沉思了一刻，便堅決地說：「我決意離開此地，以免你受窘。我將乘火車到南京，再轉船到漢口去。」

我一句話也說不出，心頭如同刀刺，半天才拼出了一句：「我心底裏必永遠愛着你，現在我們雖是突然別離，但不要爲了這個傷心。」

有人從樓梯上來了，我們疑心是艾斯，齊匆匆避去。我立在洋台上望着他的背影，直到他走過路燈隱沒於黑暗中。

當天的夜裏，齊並沒有動身，我們的朋友麗琳後來告訴我，那晚齊直等了我一夜，渴望我去和他再會一次面，因爲我沒有去，非常失望，竟喝得大醉。

第二天早晨，我被曼曼喚醒，睜開眼時，看見艾斯掛着眼淚，跪在我的床前，他的手中拿着他自己所畫的一幅圖，上面畫着一個罪人跪在十字架的面前，向一個剪髮的少女懺悔。這幅圖的意義是很顯明的。

我連衣服都來不及穿；我叫他不要這樣做，叫他快快立起來，以免遭笑於人。他也不顧曼曼在旁，求我饒恕他，必須等我說了「我饒恕你了」這句話，方肯立起來。

我洗過臉之後，他請求我同他去閒步談談。他一再求

urge him to leave Shanghai. I wanted to concentrate on my study and still to keep the friendship of Aisze. I did not wish him to be unhappy and yet did not wish to encourage his love.

At dusk Chi came to my room as though we had an appointment. I told him how Aisze had stopped the rickshaw that morning and what I planned to do. After deep thought he said resolutely: "I won't stay here and make it hard for you. I shall take the train to Nanking and then go up to Hankow."

I could not reply. Needles were thrusting into my heart. I only said: "Let me love you forever in my heart. Do not be unhappy because we must part so suddenly."

Someone was ascending the stairs. We thought it might be Aisze, and Chi fled. I watched from the balcony and saw his shadow disappear under the lamp post.

Chi did not leave Shanghai that night. Our friend Lilin told me that he waited eagerly for me to come to see him, and he was deeply disappointed and became very drunk.

The next morning Manman woke me, and when I opened my eyes I saw Aisze kneeling before my bed in tears. He held in his hand a painting, his own, of a criminal kneeling before a cross and repenting to a bobbed-haired girl. The meaning was evident.

I did not have time to put on my padded clothes; I told him to get up and not to be silly and make himself ridiculous. Ignoring the presence of Manman, he begged me to forgive him and would not get up until I said, "I forgive you."

After I had washed my face, he asked me to take a

我饒恕。我極力安慰他，因為我深怕他或許會因此發狂。過了一會，他底緊張的情緒才漸漸的平了下去。

自從齊離上海之後，起初我的心頭上很覺放不下他。他在經過南京，九江，蕪湖時，都有信寄給我，所有的信裏邊都充滿着寂寞的感慨，使我讀了非常難受。我極願把我所有的愛情獻給他，極願意盡我的力量幫助他。我們雖是彼此遠離着，但精神上似乎一天親近一天，因此，我對艾斯自然漸漸的冷淡，使他非常傷心。他曾向曼曼探問我的情形，曼曼回他說：「冰好似對於戀愛已經有些害怕，她現在一天到晚專心於學問，我勸你必須抑制一些，不要再去使她煩惱。」

我至今還忘不了艾斯，我頗覺得奇怪，像這樣熱烈的人居然也會被理智所克服。因為有一天，他突然跑來向我說：「冰，我們都還年輕，似乎還不必急急於講戀愛。我知道你正在熱心求學，所以我已決計在明天動身赴天津。」

我突然感覺到寂寞。我真想不到他竟會如此決絕的。

那晚上我到船上去送行，我們談了一整夜。他似乎腦筋裏還留着一些愛的希望，但我明知我和他只有友誼的可能。

北平

我之能夠到北平女子師範學校裏去唸書，完全是我三哥的力量，這是我所極感謝的。替我打算一切，並使我能夠脫離流浪生活者，完全是這位三哥。

walk with him. Again and again he asked for my forgiveness. I tried to comfort him, for I was afraid that he might go insane, and slowly his emotion cooled.

After Chi left Shanghai, I could not keep him out of my mind for a moment. He sent letters to me from Nanking, Kiukiang, Wahu, and it made me uneasy to hear of his loneliness on the boat and of his uncertain future. I wanted to love him with all the love I had and help him with all the help I could give. Though far apart, spiritually we grew nearer each day, and naturally I felt colder toward Aisze, and he grew very sad. He asked Manman about me and she said, "Ping seems to be afraid of love. She works hard at her studies. You had better control your emotions and not make her uncomfortable."

Even today I cannot forget Aisze, and my surprise that reason could conquer a man as passionate as he was. For he finally came to me one day and said, "Ping, I feel that we are too young and should not think so much of love. I know your eagerness to study and I have decided to leave tomorrow for Tientsin."

Suddenly I felt alone. I had not known that he would be so clear cut and firm.

That night I saw him off at his boat. We talked all through the night on the boat. He still had a dream of the possibility of love, but I knew that there could only be friendship.

Peiping

I must thank my third brother for giving me the chance to go to the Women's Normal College in Peiping. It was he who advised and helped me to leave the miserable life of a wanderer.

我很明白當時他的感想是怎樣的。這時節，文藝學校裏邊的學生已多數被捕入獄。學校也被軍閥所封閉；法租界的電車工人正在罷工。每個人的行動，稍有一些不謹慎，便會遇到危險，三哥深怕我再惹出什麼禍事來，所以力勸我即刻離開上海。我起初還倔強着不肯走，雖然這時節我已窮得隔四天才吃一頓飯，隔天才吃幾個燒餅充饑。我寧可在上海的馬路上喝西北風，而不願受他的資助。我這種倔強態度使他非常憤怒，有一個時期中，竟至彼此不通一信。但我倒覺得更快活了，一個人能自由，能不受拘束，那是何等的暢快啊！我把社會當作一個學校，只要肯用功研究，是很可以從而獲得學問的，我又何必進什麼學校呢？

後來，三哥再度開導我，勸我還是到北京去爲上，我竟被他說服了。曼曼說：『你這個人真古怪，有這般的讀書好機會，爲什麼不願意去呢？』

最後，我聽從了三哥的勸告，跨上了輪船到北平去。這時齊已回上海，便與我同行。我記得我動身的那天正是五月一日勞働紀念節日。

我在北平進了學校之後，起初六個月中，生活極爲安靜。學校中的學費是免繳的，膳宿費和書籍費等是由三哥所供給的。有一天，出乎我的意料之外，他竟買了一件袍子送給我，袍子並不很厚，但比了我在上海過冬的那件破袍子自然是和暖了多多。

說起了齊，真是令人可恨可歎。我的一個快樂的生活

I well knew how he felt. The students of the Art College were being put in jail; the school itself was dissolved by the imperialists; the workers on the tramway in the French Concession were on strike. Every move one made seemed fraught with danger. My brother was afraid that I might get into trouble again and insisted upon my leaving Shanghai immediately. I stubbornly refused, even when I had only one regular meal in four days, with one or two flour cakes on other days to check hunger. Rather than accept his help I preferred to "drink the northwest wind" of the Shanghai streets. My obstinacy angered him and we stopped writing to each other for a time. But I was all the happier! What joy it was to be free and unrestrained! I regarded society as a school where one could learn if one only worked hard. Why go to a college?

Third Brother redoubled his efforts to persuade me to go to Peiping, and somehow or other, we patched it up. Manman said, "You are so peculiar! Why do you let go a chance to study?"

Finally I yielded and took the steamship to the north. Chi, who had returned, went with me. It was, I remember, the day the workers celebrate, the first of May.

In Peiping my college days began and I had six months of peaceful life. No tuition was required and the fees for board and books and miscellaneous expenses were provided by my brother. Then to my surprise, he bought me a coat, which I would have never dreamed of. The coat was not very heavy, but how much warmer it was than the torn old gown which was the only thing I had to wear on snowy days in Shanghai.

Oh, Chi! A happy life was just beginning for me when

剛剛萌芽，不料又被這個人從半腰裏走出來，將它毀滅了。你破壞了我們的愛情，也破壞了我們的快樂，但我也不能怪你，我只恨上天怎樣會把兩個性情完全不相合的人結合起來，以致造成這樣一個痛心的結果。

因為齊不能諒解我，不肯信任我，所以我決計和他分離。他那種憂鬱的性情和我的爽快脾氣是永遠不能融洽的。

無論情勢怎樣的艱難，我實在不能不和他決絕了，這件事的發生是在小孩未生的半年之前。

某一個夏天的晚上，小孩出世才二十天，我接到了一張明信片。

信片上只有寥寥幾個字是：「我下獄了，請你設法救我。」確是齊的親筆。不是上面蓋着監獄的圖章，我還當他是有意作弄我哩。

他又爲了什麼事入獄的呢？他到天津僅僅四天，已經鬧出禍來，叫我又有什麼辦法呢？我曾請他暫時留居北平，以便幫同照料小孩，但他急於到天津去找工作，現在，工作沒有找到，倒反而跌進監牢去了。

同晚上，我一個朋友從天津來，告訴我這件意外事的經過：「這完全是運氣不好。他剛在一家書店裏，拿了一本書在那裏閱書，正被警察爲了旁的事去搜查這家書店，竟不問情由把他和書店老板一起抓了去。」

我一步一步向那高大而陰暗的監獄走去，心裏突突地跳個不住，我能夠想像到裏邊是怎樣的陰沉淒慘。

you came and destroyed it. You were the one who broke our love and broke also my happiness. But I did not blame you. I hated the gods who united in love two wholly different characters, with such a heartbreaking outcome.

Because Chi did not understand me, did not trust me, I decided to separate from him! His melancholy character and my straightforward way of doing things could not go together.

I had to break with him, however hard it was. That was nearly half a year before our baby was born.

One hot summer evening, when my baby was not quite twenty days old, a postcard came.

"In jail, come to my rescue," were the words on the postcard. It was clearly the handwriting of Chi. I would have thought it a joke, had not the seal of the jail been there.

What was it about? What was I to do if he had got into trouble on his fourth day in Tientsin? I had asked him to stay in Peiping longer to help look after the baby, but he was too eager to go to Tientsin and look for a job there. And now instead of finding a job, he had stumbled into jail.

The same night a friend came from Tientsin and told me what had occurred. "It was sheer bad luck. He was in a bookstore and it just happened that the police dropped in to investigate some matter. The manager was arrested and Chi was taken to jail along with him, under some pretext."

Step by step I walked toward the tall, somber prison, my heart throbbing. I could well picture how dismal the

我和他見面了，大家好一會說不出話來。

我現在所探視的是我舊日的一個愛人，我們如若沒有半年以前分居那件事，那末眼前也不至於如此的痛苦，而我也可以照顧他，每天來探望他了。

「這件案子可能請一位律師設法取保嗎？」我問。

「但那裏去籌三百塊錢呢？」

我們的談話僅僅是那麼兩句。

我費了許多事想去請一位律師，但終沒有成功。金錢，金錢，可恨的金錢！都是你在那裏作祟。

命運似乎一路在那裏和我作對。三哥須回長沙去教書了，因為進益減少，已不能再繼續補助我了。這在我是一個很重的打離，我似乎只好輟學了。我即使能夠靠着替雜誌和報紙寫幾篇文章，拿稿費來應付膳宿費，書籍費，和衣服費，還是無濟於事，因為我還須維持齊的家庭和撫養我的孩子。

有兩個朋友，因為看見我實在窮的可憐，特地把他們的位置讓給了我，因此，我便在一家中學裏邊當教師，束修是每小時一元，另又在一家小學裏邊擔任功課，束修是每小時七角五分。我除了須改課卷九十五本，並自己讀書之外，每週須上課十二小時。古語說得好：「教學相長」，但我並不以為然，我總覺得犧牲了自己的學業去教別人，在我實是一種絕大的損失，而改課卷那件事又使我費去不少的時間，以致每天夜裏到了十二點鐘還不得睡覺。

我時常徹夜不眠，但居然還能支持，這使我自己也覺得奇怪，有一天的夜裏，電燈忽然熄滅了，我去開總電鈕

prison must be.

We faced each other with no words to say.

I was visiting one who was once a dear lover. If we had not separated half a year ago, it would not have been so painful today. I could have taken care of him and come to see him every day.

"Is it possible to have a lawyer arrange for bail?"

"But how can we get three hundred dollars!"

That was all our conversation.

I spent no little energy and time in trying to get a lawyer, but with no results. Money, money, hateful money!

It seemed indeed as though Fate were against me. Third Brother had to go back to Caugsha to teach, and because his income was less, he had to stop supporting me. The blow was heavy. Must I stop studying? Even if I could pay for my board and books and clothes by writing for magazines and newspapers, it would be impossible to have any spare money for anything else. And I had to help Chi's family and care for my baby.

Two friends gave up their jobs to me because of my extreme poverty. I taught Chinese at one high school for a dollar an hour, and at another for only seventy-five cents an hour. I taught twelve hours a week, besides correcting ninety-five papers, and studied while I taught. The classics say "Teaching improves study and study improves teaching," but then I felt that this was only a phrase. To sacrifice my own studies to teach others was a great loss, and the notebooks I had to correct kept me busy every night until twelve o'clock.

I was surprised to find that I could stand so many sleepless nights. One night when the electricity had been

時，不幸微觸了一次電，幸而還好，不大厲害，但我不得不在洋臘燭下繼續做我的工作。我每晚的工作程序是：十二點之前修改課卷，十二點之後，在四周已經寂靜時，寫文章。

我的文章，因為語氣過於急烈，各大報館都拒絕採用。我有一個朋友，他是某日報的編輯，常向我說：「你為什麼不寫一些語氣和平的文字？為什麼不寫一些不要提到革命的文章？難道這是不能的嗎？」

「不要和我說笑話，」我回答，「我是離了革命便不能過日子的。」

只有一張小型報紙很歡迎我的著作，但酬報極微，每千字只有半元，好得稿費付得尚稱爽快，我曾用過許多筆名如：子英，老鄉婦，英子，和麗娜，但從來沒有用過冰瑩的本名。我的稿費收入有時一個月可達十五元，再加上東修，也有四十多塊錢，但車錢已經去了七八元；我又須僱一個老媽子照看孩子，此外我隔些日子又須到天津去探望齊。

昭仁，雲實，和我合住着一間房，我們每天都在學校的餐堂裏吃飯，我們的胃口都很好，但身邊的錢時常不夠，因此有時便不得不用欺騙的方法了。我們吃飯大都是現付錢的，但偶爾也可以欠帳。我的一生之中，這時節的飯量最大，每餐須吃飯三大碗，再加兩個麥餅，每餐總是在吃完之後，即叫廚房開帳。

shut off, I received a shock when I tried to turn on the main switch, and thereafter I did my work under candle-light. My schedule was to correct papers until twelve, and to write articles after twelve when the dormitory was dead quiet.

My articles were refused by leading newspapers because of my radical ideas. A friend who was the editor of one daily often said, "Why not write something gentler something that has nothing to do with the revolution? Is it not possible?"

"Don't make a joke of it," was my reply. "I cannot live without the revolution!"

There was one small paper which welcomed my writings, but the pay was only fifty cents for a thousand words. Luckily it was paid on time. I used many pen names, such as "Tse Ying," "Old Country Woman," "Yingtsi," "Kehlei," and "Lina." Never once did I use "Pingying." Sometimes I wrote so much that I could get fifteen dollars a month, so that with my salary I had more than forty dollars. But my cartage cost seven or eight dollars a month; and I had to hire a maid to look after my baby and I had to go to Tientsin to visit Chi cace in a while.

Chaojen, Yunhsien, and myself shared a bedroom. We ate together in the college dining room and because we had tremendous appetites and could not pay for all we ate, we cheated. We paid after each meal but sometimes could run up charge accounts. I had then the greatest capacity for food I ever had in my life, and ate three big bowls of rice and two wheat cakes at each meal. After finishing dinner we would ask the cook to make out the

「幾碗飯？」他必先問。

「一共五碗，另加稀飯兩碗。」

「嗎？三個人只吃這一些嗎？」廚房每是起疑地問着。

「什麼話？難道我們會騙你嗎？」我們每裝出發怒的態子向他說。他看見我們憤憤的神氣。似乎覺得是冤枉了我們，總是低着頭轉身走去。這種多吃少報的事情大概很多，因為有一天，我們看見飯桶旁邊已經有一個人守着，當我們去添飯時，他很客氣地把飯碗從我們的手中拿了過去。

「嚇！廚房太調皮了。明天我必去買隻更大的飯碗來。」照仁說。我們聽了，笑得嘴裏的飯噴了一桌子。

有一次，我已欠了廚房七塊錢，他見面便向我討帳，我被他討得怕了，竟至不敢到餐堂去吃飯，接連四天我只買些甜薯和麥餅充飢。

大除夕，我避到一個朋友的家裏邊去躲債。我回到學校裏時雲賢告訴我，廚房已來找過幾十次，他甚至向錢媽索取我的衣箱做押頭，幸由錢媽擔保我必會償付，他才離去的。其實呢，衣箱裏邊也不過是幾件破舊衣服和一些書籍紙張。

大雪已經鋪滿了地面。學校裏邊的客室中時常是坐滿着西裝的青年，手裏提着跑冰鞋，等待他們的女友一同到公園裏去跑冰。我呢，總是縮了頭頸，挾着書本，在飄飄

check.

"How many bowls of rice?" he would ask.

"Five, with two bowls of porridge."

"Hunh! What a small amount for the three of you!" the cook would say in a suspicious tone.

"What are you saying? So you think we are cheating you?" we would say indignantly, and what with our tone and style, he would turn away feeling that he had been unjust to us. There must have been other cases like ours, for one day we found a guard standing at the rice pail, and when we came to refill our empty bowls he took them politely out of our hands.

"They are clever! I'll buy some big bowls tomorrow!" said Chaojen, and we laughed until rice came out of our mouths.

Once I came to owe the kitchen seven dollars and the cook followed me constantly, demanding payment, until, afraid of meeting him, I avoided the dining room, and for four successive days I ate only sweet potatoes and flour cakes.

I spent the Chinese New Year's eve in a friend's house, avoiding my creditors. When I returned to the college Yunhsien told me that the cook had asked for me thirty times. He even asked Chenma for my trunk, and left only when she guaranteed that I would pay me debt. Actually all I had in the trunk was some old clothing and papers and books.

Snow covered the ground. The guest room of our college was often filled with young men in Western suits, carrying skates and waiting for their girl friends to go skating in the park. But I, with my head hidden between

的大雪中等候電車。有時電車也停開了，我只好踏着雪步行。夜裏，其餘的女學生大都坐在水汀的旁邊，有些替她們的愛人結絨衫，有些打瞌睡，一面開着留聲機。至於我呢，吃幾粒炒豆，喝一杯白開水，自以為另有一種樂趣。

待衆人都已安睡，四面寂靜時，惟一的聲響便是我的筆在紙上的寫字聲，一張寫了，又是一張，因為我是靠寫作過生的，自然不得不像沙漠中負着重載的駱駝一般努力向前。

齊每月必有兩張明信片寄給我，他總是說獄中的飯食怎樣的粗糙，求我多送一些小菜進去，並說每次送去的食物，都是和同監的犯人共享的。他又求我帶幾本書給他。他也很記掛孩子，求我好好的看顧她。

從北平到天津的火車，票價須三塊多錢，再加上旅館宿費和飯錢，帶去給齊的麵包，白煮雞蛋，和鹽小菜等，我每去一次必須花十幾塊錢，這在我是很吃力的，因此我須先一星期便節省起來。我減省自己的飯食，只吃了些甜薯或麥餅充飢，有時我到了天津之後，總是步行以省車錢。

「他是你的什麼人？」監獄中的管理員常要問我，「爲什麼你每次來看望他時必要哭泣？」

「他是我的哥哥呀！」我只好推說，「他是無辜被累的，我怎麼不傷心。」因此，監官很可憐我，常容我們例

my shoulders and hugging text-books under my arm, would be waiting for the street car in the snow that fell thickly. Sometimes the street car stopped running and I had to walk in the snow, step by step. At night the other girls sat close to the radiator, knitting for their lovers, or dozing in their chairs, while the gramophone sang "Dream Lover," while I, chewing a few beans and drinking a glass of boiled water, was quite happy in my own way.

Deep at night when they were asleep the only sound would be that of my pen scratching on paper, writing page after page. For I had to write for a living, and struggle on like an overloaded camel in the desert.

Chi sent me two postcards regularly each month. He reported that the food in prison was very bad and asked me to bring him more vegetables. He said that he shared the food I brought with other prisoners, and wished that I would bring also some good books. The baby was very much on his mind, and he urged me to care for her well.

The carfare from Peiping to Tientsin was more than three dollars. With my hotel and meals, and the bread, meat, boiled eggs, and salted vegetables I took to Chi, I had to spend from ten to fifteen dollars on each visit. It was a considerable sum for me and I had to start saving a week before. I would cut down my meals and take some sweet potatoes or wheat cakes to stay my hunger, and sometimes when I arrived at Tientsin I walked from the station in order to save money.

"What relation are you?" the guard would ask, "Why do you cry every time you come to see him?"

"He is my brother," I would answer. "I feel sad because he is innocent. He did not commit any crime."

外的多說幾句話。

我這時對於齊，憐憫之心勝於愛心，我很同情於他所遭的厄運，並因他無辜入獄，很替他憤憤不平，但我實在沒有力量去救他。我如若心腸硬一些呢，也便丟開不管了。至於他對我的態度，雖是身在獄中，依舊沒有改變，他曾寫了一封極長的信，給他一個在漢口當記者的朋友，信裏邊把我描寫成一個好虛榮而心腸硬的女子，說我的和他離婚是因為我打算去另嫁一個富翁。他的朋友看了這信，知道是他在神經錯亂時的憤激之談，所以並沒有把這封信發表，特地寫了一封回信埋怨他，說他不應該講這種話。但是我並不怪他，因為我知道他這時是怎樣的心境。這樣一個熱血富於理想的青年，剛才經過一次戀愛上的風潮之挫，又無端地身入牢獄，自然難怪他的神經要錯亂了。所以這件事在我更無須加以辯論或聲明，日子多了，他們自會知道我的為人的。

我竟不敢想像我們的前途。我無論怎樣心中難受，實在不能不和他決絕，但因他尚在獄中，又覺得未便使他再受打擊。其實呢，我們現在已經有了一個孩子，我也無妨犧牲一己，和他言歸於好。但我的心已受了創痛，我的神經已經碎裂，我已沒有再去度愛情生活的勇氣，即使勉強去試一下子，那也是必定失敗無疑的。

我迴想末了一次到獄中去探望他的情形，我似乎本能地知道，是我們最後的一次會面，以後便將永遠分別。這一次我帶了很多食物給他，我沒有開言之前眼淚已淌了下來。

Then he would allow us to talk overtime.

My feeling for Chi was more pity than love. I sympathized with his misfortune, and I felt angered, too, at the injustice of keeping him in prison indefinitely, but it was beyond my power to help him. If I had had a colder heart, I could have stopped seeing him. Even in prison he did not change his attitude toward me. He wrote a long satire to a friend who was an editor in Hankow, describing me as a vain and hard-hearted girl and saying that I had broken with him in order to marry a rich man. The friend, knowing that he wrote it when his mind was under an abnormal strain, did not publish it and wrote a letter rebuking him. But I was not angry, for I understood how he felt. The emotional stress was inevitable for a hot-blooded, idealistic youth who suddenly found himself in jail, and besides had just passed through this unhappy crisis in love. As for myself, there was no need for argument or self-explanation. Time would show what kind of a woman I was.

I dared not think about our future. I had to break with him, however hard it was for me, but now that he was in prison I could not give him another blow. I might have compromised and sacrificed myself, now that we had the child, the fruit of our love. But my heart had many wounds and my nerves were shattered. I no longer had the courage to pursue love, and even if I had, that love would always be imperfect.

I recall my last visit to the prison. Instinctively I seemed to know that it would be our last meeting, that we were to see each other no more. I brought a lot of food for him. Before I said a word my tears flowed.

「爲什麼那般傷心？難道你將要離開北平嗎？」他很
繼續靜地問我，他向來是輕易不會淌眼淚的。

「不，」我說，「我擬想帶了孩子搬到離開監獄較近
一些的地方來，這辦法可以使我以後省去不少的旅費，而
你也可以常常看見你的孩子，她已長得極惹人歡喜了。」

他的頭低下來了，不發一言。他是在想着我們當初戀
愛的時候嗎？還是在想着他的孩子？

「求你好好的看顧這孩子。」他說，語氣異乎平常的
和婉；突然間，我心中又激起了一股對他的愛念，我很想
擁抱他，親他的面頰，並附耳向他說：「齊！我們再試一
下子吧。」

可惜監獄的鐵柵阻隔了我們，我的手還沒有伸上去，
背後已經有人高聲喊說：「呸！你還在這裏嗎？趕快出去
。」一個守丁便走過來推我出去。我還依戀着不肯走，
望着可憐的齊拾起我所帶給他的物事，向裏轉身緩緩地行
去，我的心突突地跳個不住。

此後我們還有相見的一天嗎？我的眼前模糊了，金星
亂迸，我的心頭好似壓着一塊千斤的石頭；我的兩腿不自
主地向前移動。

我剛走出大門，忽然又跑回到接應室裏邊。

「你不是剛剛來過的嗎？怎麼又來了？」獄官的臉色
更加可怕了。

「我忘記了交代一句話，懇求你讓我和他再見一見面
！」

「不行，下星期再來。」

我被他推出門口，我只好含着眼淚走去。我這時覺得
齊好似跟在我的後面，我回頭去望窺，好像他真果立在那

"Why are you so sad? Are you leaving Peiping?" he asked quite calmly. He did not cry easily.

"No," I said. "I was thinking of bringing the child and living somewhere near the prison. It would save money and you could see the baby then. She is so lovely!"

He dropped his head and was silent. Was he thinking of the time when we were in love, or of our baby?

"Please look after the baby well," he said. His voice was unusually gentle. Suddenly I felt again my love for him. I wanted to embrace him and kiss him and whisper to him, "Chi, let us try once more!"

But the iron bars were between us, and before I could even touch his hand, a voice called: "Are you still standing there? Hurry along and get out." A jailer came and pushed me roughly. Still I stood gazing at poor Chi gathering up the things I had brought, and as his shadow disappeared my heart beat violently.

Would I ever see him again? Everything was in a blur. Stars danced before my eyes, and my head swam as if pressed down by a thousand-pound stone; my legs moved aimlessly without my control.

After I was outside the gate I turned and ran into the reception room again.

"Weren't you here a moment ago? Why do you come again?" The jailer's face was more fearful than ever.

"I forgot to tell him something. Please let me see him again!"

"No. Come next week."

I was pushed out. I controlled my tears and went away. I felt that Chi was following me. I turned my

裏，歎着氣看我。

我們到幾時才能毀滅這個監獄，毀滅這個堅固如铁的監獄，放廣裏邊所囚的無數學生和勞工？我們幾時才能得着這批被囚者所夢想的自由世界？我們只有藉着不屈不撓的奮鬥，才能達到和平，自由，和公平的生活。

我信任未來，希望已經替代了灰心，熱望已經替代了憂慮，只要我們活在世上，我終有一天會和齊重行會面的，因為我們兩人的思想終久是相同的，兩個人終久都是同一個奮鬥之中的同志。

回到南邊

我這時離畢業已很近，心裏很想取到一張文憑再走，但這也是沒法的事，所以只好丟開。不過北平這地方已在我心中留下一種很深的印像，我把它當作親人一般熱愛它。我雖是習於流淚，到處為家，但北平確使我依戀難捨；我拖了孩子跨上火車時，胸中真有說不出的感慨。孩子因離了奶媽哭着，希成夫婦替我抱着孩子，容我裝好一個奶瓶，但孩子哭個不休，不肯吃牛奶，我自己沒有奶，又沒有力量帶着奶媽同行只好聽她哭叫，她直餓了三天四夜，沒有奶吃。

我懷着一顆創痛的心乘着火車到了南京，在南京又換了輪船到漢口。

我的旅費有限，連付飯錢都不夠。我的朋友某君可憐

ing me go.

When could we destroy this prison, this prison as strong as steel, and free the thousands of youths and workers held in it? When could we have the free world of which these prisoners dreamed? Only by fighting together, without flinching and without stop, could we reach a life of peace and freedom and justice.

I trusted the future. Hope took the place of despair; eagerness the place of sorrow. If we live, there is always a chance that I may meet Chi again, for after all our thoughts are alike and we are comrades in the same struggle.

Return to the South

It would have taken just a little more time to get my college degree. Though I was not able to get it, it did not bother me much. But Peiping left a deep impression on me. I loved it as a beloved person. I was used to a wandering life and could settle anywhere, but Peiping was very hard to leave. I can not describe the feeling I had when I climbed into the train with my baby. She was crying because she was leaving her wet nurse. Mr. and Mrs. Hsi Chen held her while I prepared a bottle, but she cried and cried and would not open her mouth to take the milk. I myself had not a drop of milk for her and it was impossible to take the wet nurse with us. She cried in hunger for three days and four nights.

So with a wounded heart I took the train to Nanking, carrying my baby, and from Nanking we went on a steamer to Hankow.

I did not have enough even for food. On account of

我的孩子，特把她的結婚戒指當了錢給我，另一位朋友則爲了我當去一件大衣。

平靜無浪的揚子江又引起了我自殺的念頭，我實在活的不耐煩了。如在一個富於迷信的人，他必會說我是前世作了孽，所以今生會得到如此的報應。

這個世界上已經沒有可以使我依戀的物事，別人都有希望，前途，理想，但我是一切都沒有了，除了我的孩子。我屢次暗想：「不如和孩子一同投江吧，不消幾分鐘便可同登彼岸了。」但是轉念又覺得我實在不應該如此做，孩子沒有犯什麼罪，她有活着去得到一個前途的權利，她有着無窮的希望，我又怎麼可以把她的生命犧牲呢？

孩子睡着的時節，我每每淚如雨下。我覺得前途是一片黑暗，我和齊的糾紛已經以不了了之。但這個孩子的問題又怎樣解決？留養下去嗎？問題又發生了。把她帶回我自己的家裏去是絕對辦不到的，因為不但母親要堅決反對，而且全村的人都會譏笑，如說帶着她和我一同流浪吧，經濟上又夠不到，除非把她交給齊的母親，但如此則我又冒着永遠不能和這孩子見面的危險，我越想越恨我自己當初不該那麼多情。

我們到武昌時，孩子差不多餓得動也不會動了，幸而遇到一位婦人肯暫時喂奶給她吃，才救了她的性命。

我便帶了孩子和齊的母親同居了。她還沒有得悉我和齊已經決裂，也不知道我們已經沒有再合之可能。她終日

the baby, one of my friends sacrificed her wedding ring and another her winter coat to help me get a cabin.

The placid river once more made me think of suicide. Life had become too hard for me to bear. A superstitious person would have said that I had committed many crimes in the previous incarnation and now I had to endure these sufferings as a punishment.

I had nothing on this earth to live for. Others had hope, future, ideals, but I had nothing, except to worry about my child. Many a time I thought: "Jump into the river with the child. It will take only a few minutes to end these two lives." Yet I felt I ought not to think of it; the child had committed no crime; she had a right to the future and she had endless hope. Why should she be sacrificed for me?

When the child slept, tears came over me in floods. The future was but a stretch of darkness. I had settled the question of Chi by leaving it unsettled. The question of the child lay before me. Should I keep the child? To take her to my home was absolutely impossible, for besides the disapproval of my mother, the whole village would condemn me and my child. To keep her with me to lead a wanderer's life was financially impossible. Should I leave her with Chi's mother, and run the risk that I would never see her again? I began to hate myself for being too sentimental.

The baby seemed hardly breathing when we reached Wuchang. There we found a woman who was willing to feed the child, and so the little life was saved.

We went to live with Chi's mother. She knew nothing about our separation or the impossibility of our uniting

思念在獄中的兒子，看見我帶了她的孫女去和她作伴，頗使她得到一些安慰。她待我很好。從此我便住在一間黑暗的房裏邊，一天到晚寫作文字，以維持生活。

母親和女兒

我渡過襄河去隱居在嶽麓山的頂上，我剛住了十天，忽然又接到三哥一封信，叫我回家去看望母親。我原已打定主意如若母親不來喚我，那末我是決不自己回家的，但剛巧湊着父親七十歲的生日快到了，於是我便藉此為由回家一次。

母親的性落很高傲，她常在暗地裏因思念我而哭泣，但面子上從不提起我，甚至說要不認我為女。我回家之後，曾屢次想和她說話，但她始終不理我。我特別倒了一杯茶送進去給她喝，但她竟拿起茶杯攆在地上，把我大罵一頓，我不得已只好爬上床去，假裝睡着。

夜半的時節，她從床上起來，點了一盞油燈，只穿着內衣，走到我的床邊。她從地板上拾起一條毯子，替我蓋在身上，摸摸我的右手，喃喃地說：

「手也冰冷，大概這毯子掉下去已經好久了。」

我極想睜開眼，看看這時母親臉上的表情，但又恐因比打斷她的舉動，所以依舊假裝睡着。不過我的兩眼雖沒有睜開，我也能夠覺到燈光射在我的臉上。

again. She thought constantly of her son in prison, and the fact that the child and I were with her comforted her a little. She was very kind to me. I lived in one dark room and wrote with my pen all day long to keep us alive.

Mother and Child

I went to stay on top of Yulushan across the Hsiang river. I had been there only ten days when my third brother wrote and urged me to go back and see my mother. My pride was such that I would not have gone back if she had not sent for me, but luckily Father's seventieth birthday approached, and I took this excuse to go home.

Mother was a proud woman. She had often wept thinking of me, but she would not pay any attention to me. She wanted to disown me. I went to her and spoke several times, but she did not answer. I poured a cup of tea and took it to her myself, but she tried to smash the cup, and scolded me until I lay down in bed and pretended to sleep.

About midnight she got up from her bed, and lit a small oil lamp, and came to my room in her pajamas. She took a blanket from the floor, and covered me with it, and felt my right hand, and said softly:

"She is cold, the blanket must have been on the floor a long time."

I wished very much to open my eyes and see the expression on her face, but I must pretend and let her finish the act. And then, though my eyes were not open, I could feel a light shining on my face, and a heat which made me cover my eyes with my hand.

母親用燈光照看我的面部有數分鐘之久，輕輕地歎息着說：「可憐！她瘦了！比離家的時節瘦得多了！」

她用手輕輕地撫摩我的額，我的髮，眼淚掉在我的臉上。我蠕動了一下子，好似告訴她，我已經被她的眼淚所驚醒。我極想睜開眼擁抱着她的頸項，親親熱熱地喚她幾聲「母親」，但我竟鼓不起這股勇氣。

她緩緩地回身走去，我極願意跟了去跪在她的床前，求她饒恕我。我爲取我的自由和獨立的生活，實在使她太受痛苦了。但是現在，經過四年的苦鬥，我所獲到的又是一些什麼呢？我雖拋棄了舊式的婚姻，但不過是去陷進了一個新式的情網。我極坦率地告訴母親：「在這四年之中，我已經過了種種的磨折；我曾入獄，我曾受飢餓，我已生下一個孩子；眼前還是一個政治逃犯，我的前途依舊是黑暗呵。」

這些話我當然是不便直告她的，因爲這將使她太傷心了，所以我依舊假裝熟睡着，並假作鼾聲。我聽見她哭泣……

母愛是從心底裏所發出來的，母愛真是萬分偉大的，我從此如若再不好好地做人，我真要對不起我的天良和社會了。我真要對不起自己的母親了。因此我決計到上海去另開一條活路，我的孩子則留給齊的母親照管。

這一次母親並沒有阻止我，她並且做了一些薰肉薰魚給我做路菜，如從前送我進學校一般送我動身。我從這天起，又生了滿懷的希望。

Mother directed the light straight into my face for several minutes. Then she sighed: "Oh! She is thin! Much thinner than when she left!"

With her soft hand she touched my forehead and my hair, and a tear fell on my face. I moved a little, as if to tell her that I was awakened by her tear. I wished to open my eyes and throw my arms around her neck and cry, "Dear Mother!" But I could not do it.

Slowly she went away to her bed. I wished that I could go and kneel there to ask her forgiveness. I had let her suffer too much, because I wanted my freedom and my own life. And now, what had I got after these four years of struggle? I had left the ancient way of marriage only to be entangled in romance. I wanted to tell my mother honestly, "During these four years, I have gone through all kinds of suffering. I have been in prison, I have starved, I have given birth to a baby. I am still a persecuted refugee. My future is still dark."

Of course I could not tell her these things, for they would hurt her too much. So I pretended to be fast asleep and snored a little. I heard Mother crying . . .

Mother gave me the love that is deep in the heart, the love that is great. I thought that if I did not believe myself from now on I could not face my own conscience, or society. I could not face my own mother! I decided to go to Shanghai and seek a way out, leaving my child to Chi's mother.

This time Mother did not detain me. She prepared smoked meat and fish for me to eat on the way, and sent me off as in the old days when I was going to school. I was full of hope again.

我再不會忘却上海那間小屋，我在這間屋子裏邊，在不到三星期的工夫，寫了兩部書，共有十四萬餘的字數。我整天整夜的寫作，甚至忘却了吃喝和睡眠。有時，我覺得十分飢餓時，便去買幾個燒餅，一面吃着，一面寫字。朋友來探望我，我也不招待。他們有時坐下來想和我談天，或想邀我出去走走，但我總是不客氣地回絕他們：「抱歉得很，我的著作還沒有殺青，實在沒有工夫奉陪諸君。」

他們都知曉我的處境，所以都肯原諒我，這兩部著作，我居然賣了六百多塊錢。這是我一生中所得到的最大的一筆款子。我有了這筆錢便決計到日本東京去讀書。

我已經有錢了。齊還沒有離獄的希望，這時另有一個人愛上了我，但這次我已打定主意不再落入情網。我上次戀愛的結果是一個苦惱的孩子，雖已交託給齊的母親，但因她是一個沒有受過教育的婦人，我實在不能放心，不過我決不能夠把孩子帶到東京去，只好待我學成回國之後，再好好地教養她。

「小兵」

兩年過去了。民國二十年滿洲事件發生，我便被日本人驅逐回國。我再度從事於革命工作，並在民國二十一年上海之戰中上前線做救護工作，同時也做些文字工作。後來，我又到福建去，在一所鄉村小學裏邊很克苦地當了半年教師，過後又在一所中學校裏邊當了一些時日的教員，這時期中生活略為舒適一些。

I can never forget the little house in Shanghai where I wrote two books, over one hundred and forty thousand words, in not quite three weeks. I wrote all day and all night. I forgot to sleep and forgot to eat. Sometimes when I felt hungry I would go out and buy a few buns, and write as I ate. I did not even talk to friends who came to see me. Sometimes when they came and wanted to sit and chat or go out for a walk with me, I had to tell them impolitely, "I am sorry. I cannot talk to you until I finish my writing."

They all understood and could excuse me. I made more than six hundred dollars by writing those two books and selling them to the publishers. This was the biggest sum I had ever seen, and I decided to go to Japan and study in Tokio.

I had money. There was still no prospect of Chi's release from prison. Although there was another man in love with me, I was able to make my reason triumph over my emotions. All that I had left of love was my child. I was not at ease in leaving her with Chi's mother, an uneducated old woman. But I could not take her to Japan. I resolved to bring her up properly after I returned from my studies.

Little Soldier

Two years passed. I was driven home by the Japanese imperialists in the winter of 1931, after the Mukden incident. I did a lot of revolutionary work again, took part in relief work at the front during the Shanghai war of 1932, and also did some literary work. I went to the west of Fukien and passed a very hard half year teaching in the village school. For a period I had an easier life

但我始終記著我那生長在貧苦中的孩子「小兵」，她現在已經三歲半了。

據朋友傳來的話，齊的母親已經說過：她無論怎樣，決不肯把這孩子還給我，她以為齊在獄的時期中，這孩子就是她惟一的安慰。她曾告訴我的朋友：「冰瑩如若想回來領這孩子去，我是要和她拚命的。」

我為環境所迫不得不離開廈門了，於是我決計從此和孩子同住，我實在捨不得離開她。

一個雪天的早晨，我從漢口渡江到武昌。當我在街上走過時，我看見一個穿着打過補丁的紅棉襖，戴着一頂紅帽子的小孩，這些衣帽好像就是我先前寄去的東西，那末，這孩子當然就是她了！我抱住了她，她不哭也不笑，只是張大了兩隻小烏珠向我呆看着。

「孩子啊！我就是你的母親。」我對哭對說。

她遲疑不決地喊了一聲「母親」，但一忽兒她又好似覺得這是不對的，便想掙脫了我的手跑去。但我緊緊地抱住了她，使她幾乎哭出來。我抬起頭才看見齊的妹妹頤立在旁邊。她向孩子說：「小兵，這真是你的母親啊。」

我們僱了黃包車，同回齊的家中。我拖着小兵坐在我的膝頭上，用嘴親她的額，她的雙頰，她的唇，她的雙手。

「親愛的孩子，你怎麼不認識我了？我真是你的母親啊。」我說。

「母親，你為什麼不和我同住？」她一面說着，一面

teaching in a Middle School.

But I could not forget my "Little Soldier," my child who was growing up in poverty. She was now three and a half years old.

Friends brought me word that Chi's mother had said that she would not under any circumstances surrender my child to me. Little Soldier was her only comfort while Chi was in prison. She had told my friends, "If Pingying comes to claim her child, she will have to take her over my dead old body."

But when I was forced by circumstances to leave Amoy, I resolved to live with my child and not be separated any more from that flesh of my heart.

On a snowy morning I crossed the river from Hankow to Wuchang. As I walked through the street I saw a child in a pink padded coat and a big red hat, and shoes which looked just like those I had sent to Little Soldier. It was she! I took her in my arms. She neither smiled nor cried, only stared at me with her big eyes.

"Child, I am your mother," I said, weeping.

Hesitantly she said, "Mother!" Then, as if she had done something wrong, she looked at me with suspicion and was about to run away. But I held her tight, which nearly made her cry. Then I looked up and saw Chi's sister, Yi. She said, "This is your mother, Little Soldier."

I called a rickshaw, and we went to the home of Chi's mother. I held Little Soldier and kissed her all over, her forehead, her cheeks, her lips, her little hands.

"Dear child, don't you know me? I am really your mother," I said.

"Mother, why don't you live with me?" she said, and

用手勾住了我的頭頸，好似剛從一個惡夢中醒來一般。她很是興奮，很高興地用小手拍着我說：「母親，你帶我到上海去嗎？不要再丟下我啊！」

我的兩眼已經滿含着眼淚，只向她點點頭。我們進門時，我依舊抱着她，她也依舊緊緊地勾住了我。齊的母親看見了我們的樣子，很傷心地說：「爲了孩子起見，你實在應該和她同住在這裏，孩子真可憐，常向我討母親。齊的脾氣或太壞，他或許會虐待你，但你終、原諒他。」

我沒有話可以答覆她，我知道我早就應該回來，但我決沒有和齊重圓的可能，我已經不再愛他，怎能和他再同居下去呢？

我望望我從前所住過那間房，只覺得裏邊陰暗如同監獄，只有一扇小窗，而又被屋樑所遮蔽，床已倒塌，桌上滿堆着沒有洗過的碗盞，西面的牆上掛着一幅我和齊並其他四個朋友所同拍的一張照片，我穿着一身男學生制服坐在中間，其餘的人則立在兩邊。老太太告訴我，小兵常爬到桌上去看這張照片。牆上又掛着一張小兵出世剛三個月時所拍的一張照片，赤着身子爬在桌上，胖胖的小身體，烏黑的眼珠。現在她已經不及照片上那樣胖，但相貌已經長得更爲美麗了。她的眉目極其清秀，兩頰鮮紅，聲音清脆如同音樂，不論喜或怒的時節，都是好聽的。我從來沒有見過這般可愛的孩子。

我抱着她一同吃飯，吃完之後，老太太帶她去洗臉，

clung to me as if she had wakened from a bad dream. She was quite excited and patted my hand happily and said, "Mother, will you take me to Shanghai with you? Don't leave me again!"

My eyes dimmed and I nodded to her. When we went into the house, I held her and she still clung to me. When Chi's mother saw this, she said sadly:

"You should come back to stay, for the child's sake. She often asks for her mother. Though Chi has a bad temper and may have mistreated you, you must excuse him."

I could not answer Chi's mother. I knew that I ought to come back. But I could not make up with Chi. I did not love him any more. How could we live together?

I looked around the room. It was dark as a prison, its one small window shadowed by the overhanging eaves. The bed was tumbled, and there was a pile of dirty dishes on the table. On the west wall there was hung a picture of Chi and myself with four other friends. I sat in the middle, in a boy student's uniform, and they stood around me. Old Mistress told me that the child would often climb on the table to look at the picture of me. There was also a picture of her taken when she was three months old, lying all naked on the table, her body white and plump and her big eyes perfectly round. Now she was not so plump, but she had grown prettier. She had jet-black brows above her lively eyes and her rouge-red cheeks. Her voice was sweeter than music and whether she was angry or happy, it had a poetic rhythm. I had never seen such a lovely child!

I held her on my lap while I ate. After we had eaten,

我便打開箱子找尋帶給她穿的衣服。願拿了許多封從獄中寄回家中的信給我看，她渴望我和齊能夠言歸於好。我默默地閱讀那幾封信，心中萬感交集。

老太太和孩子始終沒有回來，我跑出去找尋，找了半天依舊沒有找到。

「願姊」我喊她說，「我們必須出去找尋，這樣的寒天，老太太帶着她往那裏去了？」

願很安閒地回答：「老太太或許是帶了她去買糖果吧。」
我們母女二人不知道那天才會重新相見！

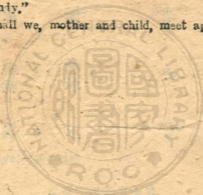
Old Mistress took her out to the toilet, while I opened her trunk to see if she had enough to wear. Yi showed me the letters which Chi had sent home from prison. She wished very much that I could love Chi again. Reading his letters, I was occupied for an hour.

The old woman and the child had not returned. I went out to find them, but there was no sign of either.

"Sister Yi," I cried, "We must find them! Where could Mother take her to in such weather?"

Yi answered casually, "She must have taken her to buy some candy."

When shall we, mother and child, meet again?



漢英對照

女 叛 徒
GRIL REBEL

版權所有 翻印必究

原 著 者 謝 冰

英 譯 者 林 林

出 版 者 求 知 圖 書

各大書局均經售

每冊實價 元 柒 外埠另加郵費

中華民國三十四年三月繪一版

中華民國三十三年陸月拾陸日贈送

1945.3.渝1-3000

Handwritten mark



Small handwritten marks

女 叛 徒

封面：陳 新

定價 2.00

林



300